

# Terror Infinity

## (无限恐怖)

### Volume 14

## Starship Troopers

Zhttty

(Zhttty)

Story Description:

“Want to know the meaning of life? Want to live... a real life?” The world changes when you click YES. In God’s dimension, you have to keep getting stronger, keep evolving to survive one horror movie after another. Do you kill everyone in your way to reach the end as a lone king? Or fight along with your comrades and survive through the support of friends? Everything was just for staying alive. Until you find the secret of God’s dimension. Who is the real enemy?

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

# Chapter 1-1

Since learning of the next movie and that they were entering it late, everyone had a strange feeling that couldn't be expressed by words.

They were struggling by the border of hell ever since entering this realm. Several times had they almost wiped. This condition never changed at all. Even though they found out the difficulty was due to Jie but this feeling persisted afterward. Team China entered the movies first in both team battles. Then the other teams came to chase for their lives. This condition finally changed.

"I'm feeling complex. Can't explain how I am feeling now. It's like a peasant suddenly turned the table. Even though I know this is only God's way of determining strength but f\*ck. This feels amazing." Zheng let out a profanity as he talked.

In the next few days, Xuan dwelled in his room all day long to make magical items for everyone. The other five people gathered in Zheng's basement to train. Four days passed like this. They would eat together after each training and talked the same topic each time, that team China was finally the stronger of two teams.

"This isn't something to be happy about." Zheng said. "Although we can be certain the other team is weaker, but situations change every second in a battle field. No one can be sure what happens next, especially in a military science fiction world. Starship Troopers takes place in a bug filled planet where millions and even billions of the Bugs might attack us. Several species are extremely destructive. This is a life and death test!"

"You are saying one thing but your eyes are obviously smiling." Lan smiled and pointed at his eyes.

Zheng coughed then said to Lan. "Contact Xuan. Tell him we are looking for him. It's not a good thing to keep making things on his own. We still haven't used our points and rewards yet. Let's discuss it after he comes. The next movie is a war film and team battle. He's the team's strategist, not engineer. It's four days already."

Lan waved her hand. "Tried it before. Psyche force can't scan into each other's rooms. God gives a high degree of privacy for the rooms so soul link isn't going to work either."

"No problem. I am here. We can begin discussion."

Zheng sighed and was going to speak when Xuan's voice came from behind. He walked over with a pair of dark circles and casually threw over two plain silver rings.

"This is the energy storage mithril rings. There are 846 energy storage rules on them, enough for all your qi or several times your blood energy. Their crafting is too complex. The cost to craft one is around 1000 points. A lot of mithril was discarded. Even though you can melt them to recycle but that requires another set of equipments. The crafting time also takes too long, about two days each. Even if I get proficient with the process, it will still take a day and half. So I won't be making anymore before the next movie begins." Xuan sat down on a chair and grabbed an apple.

Zheng was excited when he received the rings. His qi kept channeling into a ring but it seemed like a bottomless abyss. After he depleted all his qi, there was finally a sense of being filled. His gave it a thought then the qi returned to his body. There was no loss of energy in the process and no uncomfot. In other words, as long as he kept the ring filled, he would have a second reserve of qi. The same for blood energy, and perhaps even better.

"This is amazing!" Zheng stood up in excitement and said out loud. "I was pondering how to deal with the sea of bugs. Do you still remember the bracelet of Anubis? If I have extra reserve of blood energy, I can summon the army of Anubis and still continue fighting. My blood energy is enough to summon an 800 army. And I can still use Explosion and Destruction!"

Xuan finished the apple in several bites. He rubbed his eyes and said calmly. "Correct. This is the reason I rushed these two rings. These rings belong to magical items. My speculation is correct that magical items are a branch of science. Your Destruction can last ten seconds, then can you

sustain twenty seconds with the rings? If your body can take the toll.”

Zheng wore the rings on his two hands. The one on left hand filled with qi and the one on right hand with blood energy. He said with a bitter smile. “For Explosion, I can make it last a minute or a little longer. I have much less blood energy than qi right now. The ring can even the quantities out. Explosion can last one minute and ten seconds to twenty seconds. However, Destruction isn’t going to work. My body can’t sustain the strain. Ten seconds is my limit. Once it gets past that, my body will begin to collapse and lose control over the two energies. The volatility will then disappear. Do you think I am going to use Destruction a lot in the next world?”

“Just in case. We will give the matter a further thought. WangXia, test this timed bomb.” He threw over a bomb the size of two fingers.

WangXia understood the options with a glimpse but to his surprise, the core of the bomb was a black rock instead of gunpowder. The rock was carved with symbols and characters. Next to it was a fingernail size silver metal.

Xuan said. “Zheng, give the bomb some qi. If the ring can store all your qi, this bomb takes about a tenth. The material to convert energy into electricity is obsidian, not too expensive. However, the storage material requires mithril which is costly. So we are only going to test this one bomb. If the effect is powerful, I will make more. Otherwise, we will just exchange gravity mines.”

Zheng took the bomb and acted carefully. This might be the main explosive for team China in the future. He channeled qi into the mithril and it glowed in white. Just as Xuan predicted, the mithril absorbed a tenth of his qi. WangXia took the bomb with a serious expression afterward.

The detonation site was on a pillbox a thousand meters away. WangXia set it for three minutes then ran back. The accident with the gravity mine taught them to be careful with sci-fi weapons.

After WangXia ran back to the group, they stared at the site with full

attention. Three minutes passed then a faint yellow light flashed across. Nothing else happened for a few seconds. They sighed but no one blamed Xuan. It was reasonable to fail a magical item. Xuan wasn't a god.

As they were about to walk over, a thunderous sound exploded by their ears and made them dizzy. Dozens of blue spheres of light whirled around the explosion site. Everything that came in contact either melted instantly or vaporized, even the alloy ground was no exception. The craziness lasted for ten seconds before it calmed down. The team stood in shock for several minutes, even Xuan had the same expression.

He adjusted his glasses and said. "Plasma is horrifying. I didn't expect a little qi to turn into such powerful electricity. Even the legends about Xians striking the earth with thousands of thunders aren't as powerful."

"Aside from these two things, I plan to craft three more items in the remaining days. An anti-gravity device to put on the Sky Sticks, energy storage for the Sky Sticks, and we will revive Gando, the teen with ideas on robots. Then we will gather funds together to exchange him a tier C bear like suit. I can modify it to give it an electrical attack and high density energy reserve. If he is actually worthy of such a robot, his combat strength will be as strong as Kampa and Zero!"

# Chapter 1-2

As the others turned their eyes to Xuan, he smiled. “These are the items I can think of with the three rules. We have too little rules. If there’s a few more, I can craft more items, like the magical items used by cultivators in legends.”

WangXia got excited. It seemed like he was sensitive to these items from legends. He immediately asked. “Which magical items? What rule do we need?”

Xuan thought for a moment. “The ones that attack with electricity. We will at least need rules for remote control, finer control over energy, and energy encryption. Maybe also energy projectile type of rules. Anyway, it requires a complex set of rules for these items.”

“The items aside.” Zheng asked with confusion. “Why do you plan to revive Gando? First of all, we don’t know anything about him nor him as a person. He said he’s skilled with driving but that doesn’t have anything to do with piloting robots. You can’t be sure a person can pilot a robot just because he can drive a motorcycle. Can you tell us about the reason?”

Xuan nodded. He took out a sheet from his pocket. “This is the electrical jet engine I designed. The one on the side is the design of the bear suit. Due to time constraint and materials, I won’t be able to craft one myself. So we have to gather the funds together to exchange one for him. You can see from the design that the suit’s movement speed will increase by three times with the engine, up to a 200 kilometers an hour on the ground and 600 kilometers an hour during flight.”

Zheng was surprised. “I saw that suit before. I don’t think it can fly. It’s just a mini robot with good defense. You have to exchange weapons for it separately. To be honest, I don’t have faith in this robot.”

Xuan nodded and said. “The original one can’t fly. However, we have the anti-gravity rule. This rule can also be applied to the tier B VF-1 Valkyrie or the tier A RX-78 Gundam that we may get in the future and gives flight ability to non-aerial robots while enhancing ones that can already fly.”

Furthermore, with the addition of the electrical jet engine, any robot will have achieved an increase in quality.”

“Another reason is all these robots have a critical flaw, energy reserve. The tier C suit can fight for an hour before needing to change battery. The tier B robot can only fight for thirty minutes. Tier A robot drops to as low as ten minutes. If we give it the energy storage device filled with qi or blood energy and an energy conversion device, their combat duration can increase to four or five hours.”

“In conclusion, we may be able to get a main combatant with an extremely low investment. There is no reason not to take this risk.” Xuan said calmly.

Zheng said. “I think I get what you meant. Since Gando died in his first movie, it doesn’t take anything to revive him. So all we need is to exchange a robotic suit. If we succeed, we will gain a main combatant, otherwise, we only lost a modified robot.”

Xuan nodded. “Correct. Compared to the cost of reviving veteran members and the need to protect their lives, he doesn’t cost anything. The modified robot will also be at least two to three times stronger than its original.”

Zheng breathed out. “Ok. We will do as you said. However, since you are here already, let’s discuss about our exchanges for Starship Troopers. Do you have any suggestions?”

Xuan shook his head. “No suggestions. You can decide on this area since you are the leader.”

Zheng stood up and said with a smile. “Let’s go. We will discuss further on the platform and revive Gando.”

They came to the platform. Xuan seemed like he hadn’t rested for several days but he stood among them. Those black circles make the others worry about him. Zheng exchanged a bottle of potion as soon as he came to the platform and threw it over to Xuan.

“Drink it. A potion to remove fatigue.” He said.

Xuan opened the cap and drank it with one gulp. At the same time, Zheng took out the Book of Amun-Ra under God. When he opened his eyes again, Gando had already appeared on the floor. He seemed to be sleeping peacefully.

“Then we will discuss how to spend our points and rewards. First, Kampa and Zero only have two rank D rewards left because you need to buy freedom for the girls you created. Understand?” Zheng sat on the floor and said to the two.

They were surprised then nodded. Zheng continued. “For the rank D rewards, Zero can use it to exchange powerful bullets for the sniper rifle. I checked it, there’s one called nuclear fusion gauss bullet that costs a rank D reward and 500 points. The effect is nuclear fusion explosion in a 250 meter diameter upon impact, about the same area as the gravity mine. Why don’t you exchange two of these bullets? You should save the remaining 3000 points since the next movie is a team battle. We can’t be sure that no newbies will die.”

Zero nodded quietly. He walked over to God and closed his eyes. A moment later, two long and narrow yellow bullets appeared in his palm. Such an inconspicuous bullet with a powerful effect over 250 meters.

Zheng then turned to Kampa. “I think you can exchange for an enhancement. Didn’t you said you want the werewolf enhancement? You can spend a rank D reward for the entry level bloodline. It will increase your stats by a lot. Your speed and strength will further increase after transformation.”

Kampa cried with excitement then ran to God and closed his eyes. A beam of light enveloped him. The light came and went fast. Kampa howled as he opened his eyes. His muscles began to grow.

The others looked at him with anticipation. Yet, his muscles only grew by a little before they stopped and his body hair only grew a little thicker. Not only was the others baffled, Kampa also stood there in shock.

“Uh. This is only the entry level bloodline. It basically makes you look hairier. Haha. You probably need the intermediate or even high level

bloodline to transform.” Zheng laughed out.

Kampa was a Russian to begin with. He was hairy and had a big build like a bear. Now that his muscle and hair grew a little more, he looked even more like a bear.

Kampa’s disappointment aside, Zheng advised him to save up the remaining points and rank D reward. Then he turned to Lan. “This movie is important since it is a large scale war and we have to fight against another team. So your effect will be even more crucial than usual. You are the team’s eyes and connection. I plan to give you a rank C reward then you can exchange a CC psyche force ability, called psyche whip.”

“Psyche whip, when a team member is being watched or controlled by another person, the user will form a whip with his psyche force to attack the other person’s psyche force. This ability gets more powerful as your mental capacity stat increases and can be enhanced to the next level, psyche shock. This is your offensive ability.”

# Chapter 2-1

Lan paused for a moment then asked in a lower voice. “Wouldn’t that break up your rank B reward if you give me a rank C reward? Didn’t you say you are lacking a weapon? You should exchange for a rank B magical weapon.”

Zheng laughed. “There’s no need to rush it yet. Overall, your psyche whip is more important because bugs aren’t the only enemies we will be facing. There will be another team hiding in the darkness. Compared to my weapon, that ability is more important to the team. Hoho. If we can gather a rank A reward in this movie, we will get you a psyche control ability after returning.”

Lan lowered her head without saying anything. Xuan said. “I have no use for my rank C reward right now, so I will give mine to her. However, I need her to give me her remaining points. I need to exchange for a large quantity of materials and tools so I need a lot of points.”

Zheng took a good look at Xuan. He wasn’t being modest. He simply didn’t need the ranked rewards for now but need lots of points. That was why he suggested the trade.

Without saying more, Zheng turned to WangXia. “I know you want to learn qi, but a rank C reward can only exchange the tier D level qi then you will have no use for the remaining two rank D rewards. We already have means of crafting plasma grenades and mines, so the gravity mines are overlapping in function. Use your rank C reward to exchange the robotic bear suit and give the remaining points to Xuan. Aren’t you wishing to learn qi? How about I teach you the Chaotic Unity Qi?”

WangXia had no objections since he used to be a soldier. Even though there was no military here to restrict his actions, but the long term habit of following orders made him accepted Zheng’s suggestion. He asked. “The Chaotic Unity Qi? You can teach it? Don’t you need to exchange for the enhancement?”

Zheng said with a serious tone. “I have been thinking what exactly are

these enhancements and abilities from the exchange. I think everything can be taught to everyone aside from the bloodlines and genetic mutations. Of course, this is only a speculation. I can't guarantee anything. So how's it? I will teach you the Chaotic Unity Qi and if you can learn it, I will teach it to everyone."

Whether they could succeed or not, WangXia was enthusiastic about learning kungfu. He accepted at once. Then Zheng began searching for his weapon from God.

Long range sci-fi and magical weapons weren't suitable for him anymore with his current strength. Furthermore, he needed a close range weapon that could bring out the potential of his two ultimate abilities, Explosion and Destruction. Magical close range weapons were his first choice.

He walked over to God and closed his eyes. Then he began to search magical weapons that costed a rank B reward. He further narrowed the weapons to large curved blades. Over a hundred curved blades appeared in front of him.

The others looked as Zheng's expressions changed between smiles and troubled. It wasn't the expression of someone exchanging a weapon but a troll.

"Shit. Which one? What a funny name, Zanpakuto, requires positive qi to use. Is this a cultivation novel? This Tiger's Soul (soul-less) looks pretty good."

A bloody red crystal blade came to the front. He quickly searched for the other versions of this blade with his leader privilege. The tier A version had half the White Tiger's soul. The AA version had the whole soul of the White Tiger. It was described as legendary.

"Tiger's Soul (soul-less), rated 93. Suitable for users with neutral attribute qi. Requires neutral qi to suppress the brutality of the weapon. Immensely powerful. Can form a light blade with qi. Length and toughness of light blade are determined by quantity and quality of qi. Costs a rank B reward and 4000 points."

Zheng took a deep breath. This weapon was like specifically made for him. The characteristic of his qi was neutral and long lasting. The light blade was also what he needed, a huge, sharp weapon that could cut through everything.

“Exchange Tiger’s Soul!”

Zheng made the decision then slowly opened his eyes. A beam shot down in front of him. After the beam disappeared, a red crystal blade was standing on the floor. The crystal blade looked extremely weird. Inside the crystal was a bone holding the blade part. The end of the bone was the handle. The whole blade looked bloody and strange.

Zheng reached out for the handle. A chilling sensation came through his hand. At the same time, his qi moved toward his hand on their own. The chill dissipated and Tiger’s Soul glowed in red.

Zheng breathed out then looked at the people behind. Everyone else was shocked. Kampa cried out and ran over. He stared at the blade and shouted. “Man, this is cool. What’s it called? I want to get one.”

WangXia was the second one to run over, not because he was slow but he was standing further away. He also asked Zheng. “This is a tier B magical weapon? Doesn’t look like it. This look should be worth a rank A reward.”

Zheng smiled and lifted the blade. It was about 160cm in length, almost reaching his nose when standing. The weight was between 90 to 100 kilograms. Normal people might not even be able to lift it with both hands. Only those with a body as strong as his could swing it with ease. Of course, without qi, it was just a sharp weapon. This was a magical weapon that was most suited for people enhanced with qi.

“Let’s go. We will test its power in the basement. It’s a magical weapon that costed a rank B reward. Its power should be amazing.” Zheng was also excited. Any man would be the same when holding such a cool weapon.

“Is this God’s dimension? Wah! This blade is so cool!”

As everyone was planning to leave the platform, an unfamiliar voice sounded. That was when they remembered Gando was lying on the floor the whole time. They had totally forgotten about him due to the discussion on exchanges. Gando wasn't shy with strangers at all. He jumped up and cried with a pair of gleaming eyes. All he could see was Tiger's Soul. If he wasn't some distance away from Zheng, he might have leaped at him.

Zheng coughed and said. "You revived, Gando. Welcome to team China."

He was dumbfounded when he heard Zheng's words and pointed to himself. "Revived? I revived? What do you mean?"

Before Zheng could explain, Xuan replied. "We will explain the revive later. Let me ask you, you said you are talented with driving and machinery, do you want to pilot a robot?"

\*Tiger's Soul come from Weapons of the Gods manhwa.

## Chapter 2-2

Gando was sensitive to the topic of death and revival but as soon as he heard the mention of piloting robots, he stared straight into Xuan. “Did you just say pilot a robot? The ones with a cockpit, a joystick, and panoramic screen?”

Xuan nodded. “Correct. That’s the one. Furthermore, I can modify your robot to some degree and give it the ability to fly, faster speed, higher strength, more powerful attacks. Of course, that will require a higher level of skill to control. Anyway, WangXia, exchange the robot for him first.”

Without any hesitation, WangXia stood under God with his eyes closed. A beam shone down which made Gando cried. He stared at the beam with excitement and then, a two-meter-tall bear robot appeared next to WangXia, a kawaii anime bear. That innocent face had no connection to the word robot.

Gando turned around speechless, then pointed at the bear robot and said. “That’s the robot you spoke of?”

Xuan walked two laps around the robot and said with certainty. “Correct. Looking at its size, there should be no problem fitting you in. Get in. Let me see your piloting level.”

“Don’t... don’t kid me!” Gando shouted. “You call this a robot? Are you humiliating a diehard Gundam fan’s heart? You think someone who watched from 0079 to Seed doesn’t know how a robot looks like? It should be metallic and at least several meters tall! I am not asking for an Eva or Mazinkaiser nor Providence or Freedom in the beginning but can you at least give me a Zaku I? Are you planning to get me on the battle field with an anime bear? Even among the Full Metal Panic series, you could have gotten one equipped with Lambda Driver. Anyway, I...”

Xuan frowned. A gauss pistol slipped out of the sleeve to his left hand. He pointed the gun at Gando’s forehead and said. “I am not consulting you. This is an order, understand? If you can’t qualify the task, I will kill

you and pilot it myself. Even though that will take away my attention from the immediate situation, it will still be better than wasting a combat spot. Have you made up your mind?”

Gando immediately said. “No problem. However, this is my first time piloting a robot, I don’t know anything about the controls inside. Can you give me a manual?”

Xuan looked at WangXia. He nodded and said. “The manual is inside the cockpit. Enter it from the back. The first person that enters will have his voice recorded. After that, you will be the only one that can pilot this robot. These are the information God pushed into my head.”

That was when Gando became more serious. He walked over to the bear robot’s back. He searched on its fur with his hand then, di-da. The robot’s back opened up. Gando climbed in and the back slowly closed up, concealing any characteristic of it being a robot. If you just looked at it by its appearance, it would make you laugh.

Everyone looked silently as the robot stood there motionless. People were getting impatient ten minutes later. The robot finally made a noise. However, everything that it said was Fummofu.

“Fummofu, fummofu, fummofu.” The robot swung its arms in excitement and attempted to walk while saying the same word over and over.

Zheng asked Xuan with a weird look. “Why does he keep saying this strange word?”

Xuan waved his hand. “Can’t help it. I thought this flaw only existed in its origin. Didn’t expect the clone from God to have the flaw also. The flaw came from the robot’s design and translates everything the pilot says into this word. Any attempt to turn off the voice changer will also crash the robot. However, we have soul link so there won’t be any issue communicating with him. His talent is not bad to figure out how to use the robot in just ten minutes. Or you can call it his talent with driving games.”

After Gando’s excitement calmed down, Zheng narrated his story of

dying and being revived. Gando stood there expressionless for quite some time before he laughed out, saying lucky. This attitude shocked the others but also gave everyone a favorable impression.

Xuan saw that everything was set so he told them to bring the robot to his room. He would begin modification and also begin crafting the devices for the Sky Stick and the plasma grenades and mines. However, they didn't let him go since it was several days before they last saw him. Xuan had no choice but to accept eating dinner together and also take care of two things.

“First is the dragon blood cultivating plan. Every newbie must get injected with dragon blood in God's dimension. This will in effect give them 4000 points worth of stats. Of course, after injecting the blood, they will have to get repaired. That's why it needs to take place in God's dimension.”

“The second thing is the T-virus prototype plan. The T-virus prototype can unlock the first stage of the genetic constraint for every member. Based on the rule of bigger reward for bigger danger, this bonus mission will be at least BB difficulty. I don't suggest tackling it without enough strength. However, we can begin our preparations now.” Xuan said as he ate.

Zheng asked. “Like? Aside from enhancements and exchanges, what else do we prepare?”

Xuan nodded. “The key is the next movie, Starship Troopers. This movie belongs to future technology. I watched it twenty-one times. There are two noteworthy weapons, Tactical Nuclear Launcher, which can be used from the shoulder, and the Morita MK II Advanced Systems Rifle shown near the end of the film. It could destroy an area of fifty meters in diameter. These two weapons are equivalent to D tier weapons from the exchange system while you can obtain an endless supply of them from that world. So we should gather these weapons in large quantities in the world. Maybe we can even come to an agreement with the government. Of course, that will be what we need to do when returning to the world in the future. We have three goals this time. One, complete the plot without

casualty, even if that means we can't kill the other team. Two, find as many clues about bonus missions as we can, a plus if we can complete the bonus missions. Three, buy as much of these two weapons as possible, at least a large quantity of tactical nuclear launchers.”

Even though Xuan was calm the whole time, as if he was talking about what to have breakfast tomorrow, the others were dumbfounded. Gando laughed and said. “You're funny. Talking like we are going there to be arms dealers or terrorists. Haha.”

Xuan nodded seriously. “Correct. We are going to be the arms dealers and terrorists in that world. In fact, if we have a large enough space, I want to buy a small starship. Quite a few movies contain large scale battles. As our team's strength increase, there will certainly be similar war type movies in the future. Then it shouldn't be an issue buying a starship in Starship Troopers.”

Sweat covered Gando's head. He asked Kampa in a low voice. “He's joking right?”

Kampa gave him a bitter smile. “Don't ask this type of questions again. I swear he's serious about buying a starship. I don't doubt his determination or ability to buy one. If this man shows any sign of enthusiasm, I can bet he's planning something insane.”

Zheng naturally heard the conversation with his hearing. All he could do was smile bitterly. He had to admit that indifference was the normal state for Xuan. If he was enthusiastic for something, there would be something crazy going on his mind, like burning down a forest.

Zheng coughed and said loudly. “Ok, ok. Let's come up with a plan first. After dinner, we will go test the power of Tiger's Soul. Everyone needs to train for the next several days until the movie comes!”

# Chapter 2-3

\*Correction from air blade to light blade.

After the meal, Zheng found the baby dragon to draw its blood. It was rather strange that the baby dragon would bite anyone other than Zheng and Lori when they want to touch it, although those tiny teeth were harmless. Its attitude toward Zheng was like that of a child attached to its parent. It would like his fingers and wag its tail.

The baby dragon looked pitiful but Zheng hardened his heart and drew a vial of blood which made it cried. That childlike expression grabbed the women's sympathy. They surrounded it and consoled it.

They men didn't have such compassion. They gathered around the vial and studied the blood. It should have the same effects despite coming off a baby dragon. Since they were in God's dimension, any problem could be solved by a full body repair. So with a short discussion, they brought the three people who hadn't bathed in dragon blood to the platform.

Zero was the first to get the injection. He held out his arm without a word. Zheng then injected a small vial into his arm. A few seconds later, Zero nodded. "Yes, it's effective. Four stats jumped by 100 points each. Should I begin the full body repair now?"

The others said yes. Zero walked under God and chose the repair. Normally, the beam only last a moment on someone who looked as intact as him. But the beam was bright and lifted him up.

"Phew. The full body repair is effective. So there shouldn't be any problem. Next up is Lan." Seeing that Zero was fine, Zheng let out a sigh of relief and turned to Lan with a smile.

She closed her eyes and held out her shaking arm. "Be gentle. I am scared of needles."

She was so cute but Zheng's whole body tensed up. They weren't the only two people on this platform. A group of men were staring at the two and one fiercer gaze from behind. Lori was there with the baby dragon in

her arms the whole time. Zheng didn't dare to make any mistake. He quickly injected the blood and pulled the syringe back. He was like a gentleman that wouldn't even touch a woman's hand.

Lan opened her eyes and gave him a mysterious look. Then she walked under God then chose the full body repair.

Seeing Zero and Lan got injected with dragon blood, Gando also held out his arm in excitement with a look screaming, stab me! Then Zheng extinguished his excitement.

"You are revived as a newbie without any points. You won't have the points for a repair. If you want to die, its faster to just cut your throat. But a full body repair doesn't cost much. We will have Lan pay for your repair after she's done."

Just like that, Gando also received the dragon blood and repair. Everyone came to Zheng's basement. On the way there, Zheng reiterated all the information about the team including each member's strength, Lan's abilities, the members that would be revived, and their next movie.

He brought out the bear robot from the dimensional bag and said. "Gando, you are our weakest member right now. However, you have the talents on piloting machines. That was the reason we revived you in advance. Don't waste this rank C reward. First of all, you need to be practiced with doing regular movements like running, jumping, rolling. You have to be practiced with them within three days. Then you will learn to use its weapons and the modified robot."

Gando looked as though he was going to cry. He grabbed Zheng's leg and said. "Leader, bro, please spare me. If I enter into battle with a robot like this, I would down the other team by making them laugh."

Zheng sighed and shook his head. He took out the Gatling cannon and pointed at Gando's head then said in a calm voice. "You can of course choose not to pilot it. Don't worry, I won't say any complains." Who would need any words when there was such a big cannon pointing at the head?

Gando accepted his fate without any hesitation and ran toward the back

of the robot. It opened up then he entered the cockpit. The start up was quick this time. Within just ten seconds, the robot was speaking in fumoffu.

Zheng thought for a bit then grabbed an electric shock stick from a cabinet nearby. He threw it over to Kampa and said. "Let him run five laps. Don't worry about him. He has double a normal person's physical stats and running with a robot. There won't be any problems."

Kampa nodded. As someone that came from the army, he had experience training new recruits. He carried the stick and chased after the robot. As soon as it slowed down, he would hit it with the stick. The pilot wouldn't feel the pain from the hit but the electrical shock that came afterward made the robot scream and run faster.

Everyone shook their heads speechless then they all turned to Zheng. He wasn't paying much attention to the robot as he brought out Tiger's Soul. "Ok, don't stare at the anime bear. Let's test the power of Tiger's Soul. It's a tier B magical weapon so it shouldn't be any worse than the EMP rifle. Hoho. After testing this weapon, I will teach the Chaotic Unity Qi to WangXia."

Everyone's attention focused on him. Their imaginations on this blade were wild since it was extremely cool looking blade and cost a rank B reward. This was also the team's first magical weapon.

Leaving aside the bear running around the field, everyone came to the weapon testing site. Several alloy walls of different thickness stood there. The thickest one being ten meters and the thinnest was half a meter. Although these walls were not up to the level of high tech armored plates but they were enough for testing purposes.

Zheng stood in front of the five-meter-thick wall. His mind was in a tranquility as he recalled the difficulty he was in when he first entered this realm. Every step that followed was a hardship of its own accompanied by death on the side. Then his comrades dying one by one, the shock when Jie handed the position to him, and the rage and despair induced by team Devil.

He quickly noticed his emotional upheaval. That was probably caused by the influence of Tiger's Soul which fitted the description of the weapon. He circulated his qi through his body and brought himself out of this downcast. Then the qi moved through his arms into Tiger's Soul. A red light extended out from the blade and as more qi entered, the light was turning into a dark red and its sharpness seemingly increased. This light also grew from half a meter to one meter from the tip of Tiger's Soul. Zheng stopped when he spent 70% of the qi.

He was a bit disappointed. The blade was only 1.6 meters. It was only over two meters with the light blade and so was the reach. In comparison, this range was less than the DD tier light saber without consideration of its power. Though that one was a high tech weapon instead of magical.

"Aye. This is already 70% of my qi." Zheng sighed and swung the blade against the wall.

He wasn't giving it much expectation but the instant he swung the blade, a huge force came from the blade to his arm. He activated his qi to hold onto the handle subconsciously. Then a strong wind swept through that gave him the feeling of a sword. He blinked and sweat covered his back. Just as he blinked, the light blade suddenly amplified. Yet, the wall was seemingly intact from the slash. There was no trace of any kind.

Zheng and the others were rather confused. A thought came to his mind and he touched the wall. It slid off in two and hit the ground with a loud impact. He could feel the ground trembled. The cut was smooth as a mirror. No one would believe such a smooth cut came from a sword.

As Zheng was shocked, an eight-meter-thick wall in the distance also had the top slid off with the same smooth cut.

# Chapter 3-1

“I estimated the range of this light blade. For every 10% of my total qi, the range increases by three meters. I used 70% before so that attack was about twenty-one meters. Such power was unexpected.” Zheng sighed.

He also noticed that the light blade’s length and shape could be controlled by his qi, which in turn affects the power of Tiger’s Soul. If he changed the shape to that of a hammer, the slash would cause a circular impact four meters in diameter and three meters deep on the wall.

“The only drawback is its qi consumption. I can’t use it more than several times with my pool of qi. Another issue is activation rate is too slow. It requires me to channel qi into the blade. It will work against enemies weaker than me but against those stronger, like my clone, I don’t know if I will even get a chance to use this attack.”

Although that was what he said, Zheng retrieved the blade into the dimensional bag with satisfaction. This blade and the Spear of Osiris were two weapons that covered long and close range attacks. Unless something unexpected happens, he would be using these two weapons until he leaves this realm or his death.

Everyone else was content with Tiger’s Soul’s power. The day was getting late. Gando also finished his five laps. He was also getting numbed from the electrical shocks as evidenced by his afro.

Once everyone left, Zheng stopped WangXia. He brought WangXia back to the platform and said with a smile. “You should make up your mind first. I don’t know if this tier A qi can be taught but I am certain that even if it does, the difficulty will be immense. Otherwise, we could have gathered up funds as a team to exchange an AA tier qi so everyone could learn it. I don’t think God will leave such a loophole. The only possibilities left are it either can’t be taught or difficult to learn, maybe even risky.”

WangXia laughed. “I know it’s going to be risky. Haha. My life would have been a waste if I don’t know about it after reading so many wuxia

novels. But just like Colonel Xuan always says, reward equals danger. That's what I am doing right now."

Zheng smiled at him. He admired soldiers who were genuine and bold. He had WangXia sit down cross legged, which wasn't necessary anyway as long as it was comfortable. Then he put his hands on WangXia's back and channeled qi into him.

"Feel that warmth flowing inside your body? Take your time, don't panic. Observe its path and memorize it. I will leave a part of my qi in your body." Zheng said in a low voice and concentrated on his qi.

After the qi made a full circulation inside WangXia, he said. "Don't worry. I will do it several more times. Just memorize the path."

Time slowly passed. As qi circulated inside WangXia's body, he was getting sweaty. However, he couldn't move a finger during this crucial time. After Zheng took off his hands, WangXia let out a sigh of relief. But his determination was to be praised. He continued sitting there and circulated the qi on his own for a round. Then he opened his eyes.

"I have memorized the circulation path and feel the qi that you left in my body. But why is this qi dissipating as I moved it? It's fine if I don't do anything with it."

Zheng was surprised and asked. "It can't be. Are you circulating on the wrong path? Try it again."

WangXia closed his eyes and tried circulating the qi. When he opened his eyes again, he gave a bitter smile. "The qi is indeed dissipating. And do so even if I don't move it right now. It won't take long before it's all gone."

Zheng put his hand on WangXia's back again and observed while WangXia circulated the qi by himself. After confirming the dissipation, he sighed. He finally understood the value of the exchanged qi. This qi could be taught but similar to normal people learning it, the disciple needed to gradually train and understand the qi. Whereas God could hand you the qi in a blink of an eye.

Judging from WangXia's situation, his meridians were atrophied. It needed constant stimulation from qi to regenerate the meridians. No wonder it was said that qi was best learned at an early age. When exchanging qi, God would regenerate your meridians to an acceptable degree and hand you the qi and the circulation path.

It wasn't feasible for WangXia to have his own qi for now, at least not without ten years of training. Or Zheng would need stimulate his meridians for up to half a year. Yet, what they lack the most was time.

Zheng sighed. He knew God would only activate part of meridians required for the exchanged qi so it wasn't possible to get an entry level qi then learn his tier A qi.

(If he unlocked the first stage of the genetic constraint, or if his physical stats are higher, maybe he can regenerate his meridians faster. Right, there's also the T-virus prototype.)

Zheng patted WangXia's shoulder, who was looking rather blue. Zheng laughed. "Don't worry. I will help you stimulate the meridians every day. You haven't unlocked your genetic constraint yet. After we obtained the T-virus prototype and helped you unlock, there may be turn for the better."

WangXia also laughed out. "Relax. How can such a small difficulty knock me down. If it really can't be done, I will save my points and rewards for a foundation pill. That will transform my body ready for cultivation, not to mention just kungfu."

They smoked two cigarettes then WangXia headed back to his room. Zheng stayed saying that he still had something to do.

(If things go as expected, you should be out to check the exchanges at night.)

Zheng thought. He carried the bear robot to Gando's room after everyone left. The boy didn't look in high spirit but he could tell Gando was actually quite happy inside.

Luo Gando, born in an orphanage, never saw his own parents. He

couldn't stand the abuse in the orphanage and escaped with a friend at a young age. They begged for food, stole, gambled, and ended up doing underground racing with their lives at stake. He had been lying the whole time. His driving skills weren't learned from arcades but through racing with his life. He experienced much more than an adult at just seventeen.

He wasn't as sunny as he looked. It was just a cover to his desires to stay alive. His friend died in an underground racing accident. This friend that was only three years older than him left him with a hundred thousand savings and a message, live on. That was why he did everything to stay alive, even murder and eating the vilest things. Until one time his motorcycle was altered by someone. He drove into a crowd to save himself, killing and injuring several. Yet, a little girl's pure and clear eyes pierced his heart. For the first time, he questioned what he was living for.

This was what Zheng saw during his revival. But he didn't say anything at the time and chose to wait.

Based on Gando's personality, he wouldn't be willing to put hand his fate to other people. He would definitely be out to check the exchange system when everyone was resting.

Zheng sat on the center of the platform quietly until Gando opened his door and walked out. He smiled and handed over a cigarette. "Come, take a smoke with me."

## Chapter 3-2

Gando paused for a moment in confusion then ran over to Zheng with a laughter. He didn't show any abnormality, just a regular sunny boy.

Zheng handed him a cigarette without any words. Gando took the cigarette and lit it without any hesitation. Then he returned the lighter to Zheng. He inhaled deeply and said with a surprise. "This is great cigarette. You got it from God? Haha. I will exchange a few packs after the next movie but it isn't convenient to smoke in the cockpit."

Zheng laughed. "Gando, you are actually pretty similar to me. Of all the people here, you are the only one that I can sense an strong desire to live. Stronger than anything."

Gando paused. When he saw Zheng's expression, he sat down next to Zheng quietly.

Zheng took another smoke. "Every time I revive a person, I can see his life, death, experiences, and his heart. Get it? I know what happened to you and know your obsession on staying alive. So you hate us right? For dying because of us in the previous movie."

Gando didn't say anything. After some time, he muttered a yes lightly. Zheng stared at him smoking the cigarette with his head down, a totally different person from before.

Zheng patted his shoulder. "This is our similarity. The desire to live. You are the only one I encountered since entering this realm with the same intense desire. When I saw your inner world, I could almost hear your cries of 'live on, no matter what happens.' It's good, for real. If you can keep this will under any situation, you will probably become a top force in the team. You will be able to survive any situation. But..."

Zheng expressed a killing intent and said in a cold tone. "We are also different in that you can do anything in order to live, even if that means backstabbing your comrades. If you actually do it, I won't let you off. I swear. You won't surpass me in a short amount of time. Don't let me know that you will do something harmful to the team. I won't remind you

a second time.”

He took out a piece of gold bar from the bag and gripped it with force. The gold bar was deformed with print of his palm.

Zheng put the gold bar back into the bag and said as he slowly walked toward his room. “Welcome to team China. This is a team where you can feel at ease. We won’t pull the trigger at your back.”

This conversation was kept hidden by the two of them. During training the next day, Gando was that same sunny boy. Zheng continued acting his role as the leader. He led the training and gave advices to everyone. Time gradually passed by. Several days later, Xuan appeared again with a pair of dark circles under his eyes and a bag of strangely shaped items in his hands.

Everyone stopped their training, even Gando who was running in front of Kampa’s electric shock stick. Xuan walked toward the bear robot.

He stood in front of the bear eyes and said calmly. “Come out. Cooperate the modification with me.”

“Eh?” Gando quickly came out of the cockpit. That afro showed how much he endured during the training.

Xuan had everyone help strip off the bear fur then opened up an area on the back waist.

Gando said with worry. “You sure? Are you familiar with robots? Don’t act like you do if you don’t. This is a tier C weapon.” He grumbled for a few minutes. Xuan’s expression never changed but Kampa couldn’t take him anymore and dragged Gando away. He found a rope to tie Gando up on a tree. Thus, the noise pollution was eliminated.

Everyone watched as Xuan installed stuff on the robot. The modification took several hours. After they put the fur back on, the bear robot did not look the same anymore. It couldn’t be said whether the change was good or bad, just that it looked more like a robot.

Two round packages were added to its back on left and right, just like a camel’s humps. In the front and back were two metallic plates carved

with symbols.

Seeing that Xuan was finished, Kampa went to untie Gando. He quickly ran back to the robot and stared at the bear, seemingly short circuited.

Xuan massaged his temples and said. "Get in to give it a try. I made three modifications. Based on data from experiments, the robot's mobility and power should have a huge increase."

Gando hurriedly climbed in from the robot's back.

Xuan continued. "The first modification is swapping the battery to a qi converted electricity power supply system. Of course, since you don't have qi, you will need Zheng to charge it. Based on the calculated conversion rate and Zheng's current quantity of qi, 10% will allow you to move for seventeen hours. The robot can store 130% of his qi in electricity. Which means one charge should allow you to use it through a movie unless it was a special situation." Xuan waved at Zheng then pointed at the metallic plate on the robot's back.

Zheng walked over without delay. He placed a hand on the plate and channeled 20% of his qi. The bear robot began moving.

Xuan continued. "The second modification is enhancement to your mobility. See that big red button? Press it after we are fifty meters away."

Everyone followed Xuan away then he yelled. "Ok, press it!"

Gando took a deep breath inside the cockpit then pressed the button. The humps on the robot's back opened up. Two blue electric jets spurted out with a loud vibrating noise. The electric jets were only twenty centimeters in length but the robot was already charging ahead at a surprisingly fast speed. It was two to three times faster than Zheng using the movement technique. In just a blink of an eye, Gando was only two hundred meters from a steel wall.

"Jump!" Xuan yelled.

Gando was totally shocked. He subconsciously controlled the robot to jump and it jumped almost ten meters high with the assistance of the electric jets. He continued charging forward and was over a thousand

meters away from everyone by now.

Xuan said to Lan. "Tell him to press the red button again."

Lan nodded. She connected with Gando over soul link and repeated the words. He pressed the button with panic. The electric jets disappeared and the round packaged sealed back.

Xuan said through the soul link. "This is the second modification. It change the direction of the electric jet to some degree for increased mobility. However, this state consumes energy rapidly so use it with care. You also don't have the reaction speed and skills to utilize it. Let's try the third modification, electrical attack."

# Chapter 3-3

The robot said in lacking energy. “Fumoffu?”

Xuan adjusted his glasses and looked at Lan. She immediately said. “He meant if this attack electrifies him then shoot him out of the cockpit.”

Xuan turned back and said calmly. “Relax. How could I do that? See the blue button next to the red one? Press it. The attack power and duration depends on how long you hold it. It will release the electrical attack when you release the button.”

The bear robot stood there for almost a minute. Then a blue electrical light began shining on the metallic plate on its front. The light grew brighter and brighter until it enveloped the bear robot and five meters around with wild electricity. When everyone’s mind returned from the surprise, the place the robot was standing on became black. They could see smoke rising from the floor.

The robot said a fumoffu before it fell to the floor. Xuan said at the same time. “The rule can only convert qi to electricity. We currently lack a rule to control this energy so the electricity it releases is uncontrollable. I can only let it jump wildly. The fur from your robot can insulate against the electrical attack but intense electricity will still paralyze your body. You have to overcome this effect as soon as possible or you might die during a battle.”

All it had in reply was another fumoffu then it lay there silently. The bear robot didn’t look the best but its ability was nothing like its look. At least after the modifications, the robot could fly short distances under acceleration and perform moving attacks at high speed. Gando said the control system had target locking assistance and a mini radar that could analyze and lock onto living or moving objects within a thousand meters. This robot wasn’t weak at all. The weak point was Gando’s immature piloting skill.

“Run, roll, jump, fly, when to use acceleration and electrical attack, and this Gatling cannon. There are a lot of things you need to be skilled at!”

Zheng said to Gando through soul link.

Lan obtained some defense against other psyche force users after obtaining psyche whip. Of course, if the enemy was way stronger than her, the whip would be useless. But as she enhances herself step by step, she would offer more and more to the team.

Aside from Lan and Gando, the effect of Kampa's enhancement had surfaced. Werewolf bloodline didn't come with any energy like the blood energy but its physical body was one step above vampires. The tier D enhancement increased his strength, reaction speed, and movement speed by a tier when he transformed. Zheng estimated that Kampa was above five times a normal person's stats when he transformed. Such level was impress for just the initial enhancement.

WangXia couldn't learn the Chaotic Unity Qi but Zheng still help him stimulate his meridians every day. Several days later, he sometimes felt a warmth moving within. Although this might be just an illusion but his physical fitness was actually slowly increasing. Which in turn motivated him to train qi with more effort. The amount of effort made Zheng feel ashamed.

Since WangXia was mentioned, now about the plasma weapons. Each plasma grenade contained about 10% of Zheng's qi. This version was an upgrade by Xuan. Electricity would fly in a five-meter radius and attack anything within a ten-meter radius. The high heat from the plasma attack could melt the alloy floor. Even Zheng wasn't certain he could survive it. They also experimented the defense of the dragon shard against the plasma weapons. The result made them happy yet worrying. The dragon shard could block the plasma and the heat but if the other team had a similar defensive item, it would render their plasma weapons useless.

The plasma mine could store up to 20% of Zheng's qi and naturally doubled the power of the grenade. The plasma timed bomb had equivalent power. These self-manufactured sci-fi weapons with magical rules were what differentiated team China from the regular teams. It had become a common acknowledgement that Xuan offered huge support for

the team.

Zero was second to the last in enhancement exchanges after this movie. All he got was the dragon blood injection and two nuclear fusion bullets for the sniper rifle. These two bullets could destroy all living things everything within a hundred-meter radius. Furthermore, its effect increases multiple folds if activated within an organism's body. Even huge organisms could get killed by one shot if it got hit by a direct shot.

Zero was the second to last while Xuan didn't enhance anything. Almost all his points were spent on crafting materials. His reward was given to Lan. However, he didn't seem to mind a bit. After modifying the robot, he brought out a large quantity of plasma grenades then modified the Sky Sticks to give them a larger energy reserve and electric jet engines. The Sky Stick's speed could reach up to 3000 km. But the user would also need to face a horrifying level of air resistance. Zheng was the only one who could still control the Sky Stick at that point. So this engine was useless until they obtain a rule to nullify the air resistance.

Zheng sat on the platform looking at all the people. These were his comrades that would fight alongside him. Team China grew stronger again after a wipe. He didn't know how far away they were from team Devil but he knew they would encounter each other again. Team China would defeat them then leave this realm.

“Let's go! Don't make the other team wait too long!”

“Enter the beam within thirty seconds. Target locked. Starship Troopers. Teleportation begins.”

# Chapter 4-1

As Zheng went through the familiar dreamy state, he carefully experienced this feeling. He felt like he sensed something every time he went through the process, but this feeling disappeared in an instant and left him with just a rough idea.

When Zheng woke up, he was standing in a noisy lobby. People in military uniforms were walking everywhere. He stood in the center of the lobby. It was as though these people intentionally left the area empty.

The first thing he did was looking at the floor. To his surprise, there were no newbies. The notification sounded in his mind.

“Team Southern Flame and team Forest had already entered the Starship Troopers world. Killing a normal member awards 2000 points and a rank C reward. Killing an unlocked member awards 7000 points and a rank B reward. Deduct one point for each member from team China killed. Plus, one point for killing a member of the opposing teams. The final score multiplied by 2000 will be awarded as points to each remaining member.”

Zheng looked at the others after hearing it. The other six people obviously heard the notifications too. Kampa asked. “How can there be two other teams?”

Zheng shook his head. “I am not sure about this situation. The leader authority doesn’t mention about a limit to the number of teams. Perhaps if the world permits it, God can pull all ten teams into a movie world!”

Xuan said calmly. “Instead of these questions, we should discuss where the two teams could come from. Based on just their meanings, Southern Flame is highly likely around South Africa. But there are several possible locations for team Forest. Based on land size and forest coverage, I think they are from Brazil. So team Forest should be South America.”

Gando said. “Both locations aren’t too developed. No wonder we are the strongest team.”

Xuan glanced at him. “This isn’t how you should think. A country’s strength is about the country. Can you say you are confident at fighting the locals in a forest? In a world with enhancements and becoming stronger nonstop, people from developed countries are not necessarily stronger. In fact, those who unlocked the genetic constraint, or has the potential to unlock it are the ones that can survive in this world.” Xuan looked at his watch.

Zheng and the others followed and looked at theirs. Wiping the other teams in a team battle didn’t mean they could be safe. The main mission didn’t necessarily require them to kill the other teams. Sometimes, it might be an unrelated mission.

“Survive twenty days. Rewards 1 point for every 100 warrior bugs killed. Rewards 1 point for every 10 hopper bugs killed. Rewards 10 points for every plasma bug killed. Rewards 100 points for every tanker bug killed.” Zheng read it out then thought for a moment. “Why isn’t there points for control bugs? Could it be?”

Everyone said with excitement at the same time. “Bonus mission?”

Zheng nodded. “That’s definitely it! A bonus mission! It will be a pity if we don’t complete such an obvious bonus mission. The question is, this is difficult sci-fi war film, why do we only have seven people? Do God consider the difficulty to be low?”

Xuan said. “The difficulty can be low or high. Based on our environment, we should be in space right now, probably inside a starship. If we can coerce the pilot and staffs to drive the starship off then hide the coordinates of this ship, twenty days would pass by in the blink of an eye. Or we can just break a leg and spend our time in the starship in safety. There won’t be a need to fight the Arachnids with our lives. Remember our current identity is troops of the mobile infantry.”

The others nodded. God would usually give them an identity based on where they appear. They might have to forge one on their own if they appeared in an empty warehouse but since this was a crowded lobby, the situation was similar to Resident Evil.

Zheng exhaled and said. “The usual rule. We will choose whether to live through these twenty days in safety and take the 1000 points, which will avoid the fight against the other two teams. Or enter the bug filled planet and farm points in the battlefield. We might also have to fight the other teams that will either end in a huge sum of rewards or death. Let’s vote.”

Kampa and Gando were the first to reply. Kampa said. “Of course enter the planet.”

Gando said in panic. “Of course break our own legs and stay.”

They looked each other in the eyes. Gando carefully moved his eyes away and laughed like usual.

WangXia immediately said. “I think Xuan is right that danger equals rewards. We are going encounter dangers as long as we are still alive. Why not just take the challenge and grow stronger? I choose to enter.”

Lan nodded and giggled. “I also choose to enter. There are no newbies to drag us back this time. We can focus on the battle. Plus, everyone is so stronger. There shouldn’t be any problems.”

Zero nodded in agreement. He didn’t even say a word. Xuan said calmly. “I think we should enter the planet. Since there are no newbies, this will be a battle between the elites. I think there’s also the possibility of getting along with the other teams peacefully. Zheng, you remember what you told me about team India’s leader? When two teams encounter each other, they will inspect each other’s powers. If the two teams are similar, then they will exchange information. If these two teams are similar in power, we might be able to exchange some rules on magic.”

Zheng shook his head slightly. Sometimes he just didn’t know how to deal with Xuan. Like when Xuan found knowledge beyond his understanding, the enthusiasm that emerged was nothing like a genetically modified person without feelings. His fanaticism toward the rules on magic were almost pathological. If Xuan wasn’t staying conscious, he might have gone back to The Mummy and continued his search.

Zheng said. “Ok, six to one. We are going to the bug planet for a ride. I

will assign our roles. Kampa is the gunner as usual. Based on the movie, bugs have strong close combat capabilities. They can tear a person apart as soon as they got close enough. There numbers can be described as a sea of bugs. God also tend to increase the difficulty on top of the movie. So Kampa need to clear bugs in a large area. Kill as much as you can. They are all points.”

“Zero’s targets are the hoppers and the larger bugs. The gauss sniper rifle is suitable against these large bugs. WangXia is responsible for blasting the holes on the ground and large swarms of bugs. Lan keep the scan inside the ground below us and other teams that might close in on us. Xuan and I are the only ones that can pilot the Sky Sticks. You will use the Sky Stick to support the others and protect Lan’s safety. Lastly, Gando...”

Gando interrupted in panic. “Wait. Wait. Just break my leg and leave me in this starship. Hoho. You can fight without any burden and don’t have to protect a newbie. Haha.”

Zheng laughed and grabbed his shoulder. “No need to. We won’t protect the ‘newbie’. Hoho. Remember to follow our pace. As a newbie without protection, you are a goner if you fall into the sea of bugs.”

Before Gando could reply, Xuan adjusted his glasses and said. “This starship isn’t necessarily safe unless it’s the one where the female main character is in. You also have to pray that the current date isn’t during the second attack by the federation. The highest rate of fatality is actually on starships. We have the power to fight the bugs but if this starship gets blasted by plasma bursts, your power won’t be able to help you. Understand?”

Gando stared at Xuan then recalled the movie. After some time, he nodded quietly. Zheng said. “Gando’s role is to attack any bugs that come close to us and help Kampa spray down bugs in range. When a large number of bugs surround us, you have to attract them and use the electrical attack. Any questions?”

No one had questions. Gando opened his mouth but didn’t say anything

in the end and just nodded.

Just then, they heard the broadcast. “Platoon 4 please gather at lobby number 3. Repeat. Platoon 4 please gather at lobby number 3. Squats will be assigned. Landing in Klendathu in fourteen hours.”

They knew the movie had officially started. People began walking near them. The team quickly squeezed out from the crowd together and followed everyone leaving the room.

“As expected. We are not in the same Platoon as the main character. The movie mentioned Juan Rico is a private in Platoon 6.” Xuan said as they walked. “Klendathu is the first invasion in the movie. The planet is the bug’s homeworld. Due to the number of bugs and their strengths far exceeded the federation’s expectations, over a hundred thousand people died in the battle. Hope Platoon 4 didn’t get wiped in the movie.”

“Don’t worry.” Zheng said lightly. “We have been getting stronger. Just be careful and we won’t fail. I won’t let anyone die in this movie. We will all go back alive!”

They followed along with the crowd. Lobby number 3 was near.

Starship Troopers was a sci-fi war film depicting a future world. Aside from human and technology, there were the Arachnids that evolve their bodies for strength. They could shoot their eggs through space onto other planets. A species that were unknown to humans. Yet, humans mistaken them as a weak species.

The Arachnids attacked Earth with meteorite and destroyed a city, then followed up with multiple meteorite attacks. Thus, the federation declared war on the Arachnids . In the movie, the human’s first attack was sending a large number of starships to the Arachnids homeworld. However, they underestimated the strength of the Arachnids and caused a lot of casualties. Over a hundred thousand troops were killed. That was the Klendathu invasion, the point in time that team China entered this world.

Zheng looked through the glass windows at space. Stars were twinkling and a yellow planet was not far away. That was the planet they were

going to enter, Klendathu!

# Chapter 4-2

As expected. Their identities were registered within the Federal Armed Services. All were private ranks. Though a senior officer appointed Xuan as the squad leader. Three other troopers were assigned to their squad, making them a regular ten men squad of Platoon 4.

Everything followed smoothly since they didn't have to worry about identity. The team followed the three other troopers to find their respective rooms. Fourteen hours to go before the landing. They could get a good night's sleep after dinner. These three troopers became their guides.

Once they found the rooms for their squad, Xuan sent the three troopers away to fetch the battle manual for the site Platoon 4 was responsible for. His position gave him the right to see this manual.

"I don't know when they will come back, so I will make this brief." Xuan looked at the other six people and said. "The first issue is we entered this world at a time earlier than I imagined and at a place safer than expected. Don't you feel strange? Three teams entered this movie. The weakest team entered first, followed by the second team, and the third team. We appeared right before the first invasion. There weren't any dangers in the movie before this time unless they appeared in the city hit by the meteorite. But God wouldn't put any team in such a hopeless situation so I think the other two teams are either similar to us in strength. We entered just a few minutes later. Or..."

Zheng had a bad feeling at this point and asked. "What's the other possibility?"

Xuan waved his hand. "The other possibility is they entered much earlier than us then they will have the time to do a lot of things. If they really did, we are at a disadvantage."

Kampa asked. "Like what? What can put us at a disadvantage? Training martial arts or magic in this world? That's only possible if they have ten years of time here."

Xuan shook his head. “Not that extreme. They just needed to enter the movie when the Federal Armed Services recruited troops. What if they became high ranking generals? If we encounter them in the battlefield, they can straight up order the troopers to attack us. Or they can find our location through scans and order bombers to bomb us. Anyway, if the teams’ strengths are similar, we will make peace with the other two teams and exchange information. If it is the other possibility, that will be up to whether they can think of what I just said.”

Lan asked. “They couldn’t get to high ranking generals so fast right? I remembered the main character only became a sergeant after many battles. They won’t be able to order a large number of troops unless they are at least colonels. Smaller numbers aren’t a threat to us.”

Zheng said before Xuan could reply. “I get what he said. Why did they have to join the Federal Armed Services during active recruiting? That’s because you could choose which field you want to be in. There are people with psychic in this world. But how much weaker is their psychic in comparison to us with enhanced mental capacity stat? If you entered the Military Intelligence, your psyche scan and soul link can probably help you climb ranks faster than the main character’s friend.”

Xuan nodded. “Correct. This is one of the points I am concerned about. If the other team discovered our location first, then we might be in special dangers. If they really became a high ranking general in the Military Intelligence, they just need to issue an order and place us on the starship where the female main character is. They can also order other starships to open fire if we seized control of the starship. While if we don’t run, there’s a 90% chance we will die following the plot.”

Zheng exhaled then sat on the bed. He grabbed a drink from the cabinet and took a gulp. “I understand. That means, we can’t expose ourselves as players before they do. Correct? However, once the invasion begins and we take out our weapons, we will become the center of attention. Are you suggesting we shouldn’t use our weapons but use those harmless firearms from the Mobile Infantry?”

Xuan nodded. “Yes. This is one of our choices. There is another one but

that may go against your justice.” Xuan smiled sarcastically.

Zheng was surprised and asked. “Against my justice? Let me hear it.”

Xuan sneered at him. “The landings consist of groups of three hundred troopers. These troopers don’t land on the same spot and we can defend against their firearms with the dragonshard. So we just have to kill everyone around us. Know why I am looking for the battle manual? Because we need to find Platoon 6, where the main character is, then follow the characters who lived through the First Bug War. Once we see them, we will put away our weapons in the dimensional bag then we can come back here in safety.”

What a sinister plan. Killing three hundred troopers, all the bugs on the way, and all those who would see their weapons. Most of the fleets were destroyed during this war and the rest were busy running for their lives. So naturally, no one would notice their abnormality. Furthermore, Lan could block off the other teams’ psyche force users with psyche whip. They could tell that team China was here but wouldn’t be able to pin point who. Then the team would follow the movie characters back to the starship. Almost perfect!

Zheng sipped his drink quietly. He finished the last gulp and gripped his hand. The aluminum can was crushed. Then he said calmly. “I understand. Let’s do it. Kill the three hundred troopers in our group. If Platoon 6 is not that far away, we will kill our way through.”

“Live on. Such a heavy weight within these two words. Xuan, do you still remember the conflict we used to have? Can I dirty my hands to stay alive? I can give you the answer now.”

The three troopers brought back the manual. The map showed that Platoon 4, 5, and 6 were spread out in a triangle. They weren’t that far away. If they used the Sky Sticks during part of the way, it would be easy to reach Platoon 6.

After everyone fell asleep, Zheng had Lan connected him to Xuan through soul link.

“My answer is I can dirty my hands but not my heart. I can massacre

everyone in front of me for the lives of my comrades, for my own life, but if you use anyone from our team as bait, I will beat the shit out of you.” Zheng said calmly as he lay on the bed and stared at the ceiling.

Xuan replied with a short ‘En’. No one knew what he was thinking. He flipped his body to the side and fell asleep. After a while, Lan sighed and fell asleep too. Zheng continued staring at the ceiling.

Eight hours of sleep passed by quickly. The broadcast woke the troopers up. After cleaning themselves, the troopers flooded into the cafeteria for breakfast. Three hours later, the countdown finally began. All the troopers gathered in the lobbies and received their weapons, armors, helmets. The squads then headed to the transportation ships.

The seven people from team China were among one of these troopers. They and the three troopers in their squad were assigned to a transportation ship. The door closed and a lieutenant walked out. He gave everyone a cold stare and said. “Remember, kill everything that isn’t walking on two legs! Kill with all your might! Give your best to stay alive!”

“Yes. Sir!”

The three troopers said. But Zheng and his team were silent. This lieutenant was going to rage but when he looked at them, a chilling sensation shut down all the words he had. Aside from the girl and a boy, the other five people gave off a murderous feeling, a feeling directed at him.

Rumbling. The ship trembled as it began to descend toward Klendathu.

# Chapter 5-1

The ship shook violently. Everyone knew the battle had begun. The lieutenant jumped out as soon as the door opened, followed by the three troopers. The others stood there silently.

“Just like we had planned. Kill all the bugs and humans on the way. If we happen to meet the other team, kill them along! Live on with all we have. We will first clear all the bugs and people nearby then head toward Platoon 6. The battle begins!”

Everyone brought out their weapons. Kampa had his huge EMP rifle. Zero’s Gauss sniper rifle wasn’t as cool looking but his expressionless face brought the cool factor up.

WangXia took out many plasma weapons the size of half a fist. He hung them all to his body. Fortunately, the plasma weapons were quite stable that neither high heat nor impact could trigger them. Otherwise, these plasmas weapons would take their lives.

Gando also got his bear robot. He did not hesitate climbing into the cockpit this time. Then he picked up the Gatling cannon Zheng placed on the ground. The robot didn’t look too great but its fingers were well made. It looked dexterous holding the Gatling cannon then jumped off the ship.

“Put your dragonshard necklace on. As soon as you notice its glow dimming, come right to me. I will refill its energy. Be careful of ambushes from beneath. And be careful of the tactical nukes. Kill all the humans that’s not one of us!”

Zheng said to them and brought out Tiger’s Soul. The moment this weapon appeared, a layer of red light filled the ship. Everyone here quivered slightly. Then Kampa and Zero exited the ship.

The outside was rather dim. The clouds of this planet looked quite thick that it blocked sunlight from reaching the earth. The color of the sky looked similar to dawn but the place was loud in contrast. Troopers were coming out of transportation ships continuously. Many of them seemed like new recruits. Some were even excited and in high spirits. There was

no sign of worry for this war. It was as though this was a trip or a game.

Zheng walked out of the ship and saw these troopers ran past him. The three troopers from his squad also ran away. Kampa said by his ears. “You call this an army? Just a bunch of mobs.”

Xuan stood behind Zheng and said calmly. “Nothing to be surprised about. The people in this world are different from our world. There is only one government in this Earth. War hadn’t happened for a long time. The army is more like a planetary expedition. That’s the cause for the huge casualty in the first invasion. The higher officials in this world are truly idiotic mortals.”

The rest of the team looked at each other then laughed dryly. A middle age lieutenant noticed the group of seven, especially the bear robot that looked totally out of place. It shouldn’t appear in serious battle. So he walked towards them.

The lieutenant said in a cold voice. “What is your...”

A red light flashed across following Zheng’s hand as soon as he spoke. The lieutenant who was three meters away moved his hand toward his chest in a confusion. His body began to slide off with this simple touch. Blood spurted out from his lower half and he fell off in two.

“Let’s begin. Don’t show any mercy! If you want to live, then kill every person who sees our weapons! Lan, scan Platoon 6 to the north.”

Zheng gave a shout then charged toward the two troopers who were standing behind the lieutenant in totally shock. The Tiger’s Soul slashed across when he was still three meters away and cut the troopers from their chests. Death didn’t come immediately. They wailed and struggled on the ground with their upper bodies.

Zheng didn’t look at the ground. His gazed ahead and said. “Zero, over there. Those two beside the transportation ship seemed like reporters. I remember the reporters were reporting the event live in the movie. Kill them!”

Kampa also began shooting at a spot crowded with troopers. He roared

and pulled the trigger. Countless tiny bullets shoot through in speed not visible to the eyes. The outer most troopers were torn to pieces without making any noise. The EMP rifle's power almost wiped the group of fifty in an instant. Merely a few survived by hiding in the holes on the ground. Waves of noise came from people around them and bullets were fired from those troopers.

The first to get hit was the bear robot that was standing on the outer most. Xuan embedded the dragonshard on the robot and had it powered by the energy reserve. So the barrier from the robot was the second toughest. The translucent barrier blocked all the bullets coming at it.

It lifted the Gatling cannon with seeming difficulty. However, it hesitated for some time before turning its head around. "Fumoffu?"

Zheng sighed and said. "Gando, fire! I won't recharge your robot again in this movie. Understand? Every bit of energy is precious. If you don't want your energy to deplete and get killed, then raise your weapon and begin the battle!"

Bang! Zero's rifle also fired. The bullet break through the air on its way. By the time everyone reacted to it, a half meter hole opened up on the ship and behind the hole was a splatter of blood and flesh. The gauss sniper rifle wouldn't even leave behind a corpse at such close distance. Those two reporters and their cameras were crushed. The only things left behind were two pairs of legs.

Gando also finally pulled the trigger. Zheng noticed a trooper carrying a rocket launcher type weapon on his shoulder. Another trooper inserting a red shell into the launcher. This scene was familiar from the movie. This was the only heavy firearm of the Mobile Infantry, also an unreasonable display of the federation's technology. This weapon could destroy an area of several hundred meters with a shot. Gando was aiming at these two troopers attempting to use the tactical nuke.

The Gatling cannon was not as powerful as the EMP rifle but it could still tear human bodies apart within a thousand-meter range. The two troopers were shot flying before they could finish firing.

“Kampa, Zero, attack all the transportation ships. Don’t let any leave our sight. WangXia, use the plasma weapons. We have to finish the fight in under a minute. Lan, find all the troopers that are hiding. We can’t leave any survivors. Also keep an eye on the distance of the bugs. Xuan, finish off any troopers that didn’t get killed immediately!”

Zheng shouted then jumped up using the movement technique. He raised Tiger’s Soul and slashed at a ship behind him. This ship was just taking off. The light blade from the slash cut the ship in half. It then exploded. The barrier blocked the flare and shrapnel flying at them.

# Chapter 5-2

One minute later. There were no other living organisms on the field. The transportation ships were also sniped by the gauss rifle and EMP rifle. The EMP rifle reaches beyond 4km and pierces armored plate within 1km easily. A few seconds of spray would burst a ship in flames. Zero's attacks were much simpler as he aimed for the cockpit. The Gauss sniper rifle would kill anything within the cockpit. Not a single ship elevated above a 1km before being downed.

"50 points for each transportation ship." Zero picked the rifle back up and said to Zheng.

Kampa also said. "Right. 50 points each and one point for every 10 troopers."

Zheng sighed. "F\*cking God is obviously encouraging us to destroy everything. Whatever. Lan, located Platoon 6 yet? Search for a path with less troopers. It will be troublesome if we get recorded by cameras from the reporters. Don't worry about the bugs. We shouldn't have any problem with our weapons."

Lan nodded and said with her eyes closed. "About 17km away. But they are retreating toward our direction. A lot of bugs over there with endless surfacing from the ground. The bugs beneath us are also coming us, lots of them!"

Zheng shouted. "Send the image to WangXia, Kampa, and me! Gando protect us. Zero and Xuan protect Lan."

The image of the scan appeared in Zheng's mind. He could endless bugs that were two-meter-tall and three meter in length swarming to the surface near a hundred meter away through the tunnels. The surface collapsed before he could notify the others and revealed a hole. Huge bugs swarmed out. These bugs were moving at a speed twice that of normal people. The first bug was already charging at the seven of them.

The EMP rifle roared again. The first bug got shattered and the one directly behind was killed by the piercing bullets though its body was still

in whole.

Gando had psychological hindrance killing bugs but not anymore. He fired the Gatling cannon. Its effect wasn't nearly as strong as the EMP rifle. The cannon triggered sparks as they hit the bugs and took a whole second to kill one. Their killings delayed the bugs from coming out for a moment and bodies were piling up in front of them.

“We underestimated them. No wonder they killed an army of over a hundred thousand in just several hours. Kampa, continue shooting. Don't let them come close. WangXia, we can use ten plasma grenades.”

Zheng exhaled then took out the two Sky Sticks. He was planning to proceed according to their plan. They would fly near Platoon 6 then find a chance to join the remaining troopers and follow them back to the starship.

Just then, Lan said urgently with a frown. “I am going to cut off the scan and soul link for a while. They found us but that was a broad scan. They didn't lock onto our psyche forces. Wait a bit. I will mask off their scan with psyche whip. I need thirty seconds.”

Zheng immediately put down the Sky Sticks and stood next to Lan. His eyes defocused as he unlocked the first stage. This was a time where they were vulnerable to sneak attacks. They couldn't tell when a bug ambushes them from beneath. The only thing he could do was rely on his sense for dangers.

That was when Zheng noticed Xuan wasn't standing near the group. He ran over to the dead troopers and was picking up red shells. He recognized these shells were one of their goals in this movie, the tactical nukes. They were the size of a fist but had the power of a tier D sci-fi weapon.

Xuan suddenly threw away the shells. Two gauss pistols slipped into his hands. Zheng then felt the ground shaking. He didn't get the time to shout when the place Xuan was standing on collapsed, exposing several holes and the bugs coming out of them.

Zheng's heart clenched tight. A bug was only three meters away from

Xuan and those huge claws were approaching him. He placed a pistol over his shoulder and fired at the bug behind. The gauss pistol was at least more powerful than the Gatling cannon. The bullets pierced the bugs head with ease. Then the two pistols began whirling around in crazy speed. No matter where the bugs came up, the pistols would get them instantly. Xuan stood in the center calmly and nothing could get near three meters of him. Dead bugs were piling up in dozens around.

Lan said. "Done!"

Xuan had been shooting for ten seconds. He was still intact but Zheng could tell his movements were not as smooth and he was slowing down. This gunning technique consumed too much stamina. As soon as Lan reconnected Zheng to the scan, he charged over and shouted. "Lan, connect me with Xuan's mind!"

He jumped down toward the hole while at the same time began a countdown for Xuan to stop.

"Stop!" Zheng said through his mind. He landed behind Xuan and slashed several bugs approaching in halves. Xuan exited his state and continued shooting only at the bugs in front.

"Lan, get WangXia in the link. Xuan stop shooting when I say so. I will take you out of this hole. Nothing will come out of staying here. The number of bugs coming out are endless. We will eventually get covered with bug corpses."

He also said to WangXia. "Set a plasma timed bomb to four seconds and throw it over when I say so!"

"Stop!" "Throw!"

Zheng gave a shout as he activated both his Qi and blood energy. He entered Explosion in under a second. The world seemingly turned into slow motion, even with the bugs' speed. He grabbed Xuan by the shoulders then charged toward the edge of the hole.

This hole was about four meters deep. Zheng jumped then stepped on the edge to climb out. The timed bomb landed on the bottom of the hole

at the same time. Four red shells were also left on in the hole.

Zheng was running toward Lan with the movement technique as fast as he could. Lan couldn't even react when he got her and Xuan to the ground. A several meter-high plasma ball appeared followed by multiple explosions and a mushroom cloud about a hundred meters from them. The cloud then covered everyone.

# Chapter 6-1

A layer of dirt covered everyone following the nuclear explosion. Kampa and the bear robot were standing a bit further away. The other five people lay on the ground. They also noticed Kampa's body looked a little larger and hairier.

“Werewolf transformation?” Zheng patted the dirt off his body and climbed up.

The hole from behind had become much larger and deeper. The dirt covering them was blasted off from this place. Not a single bug appeared from the hole again.

Zheng dug out the two Sky Sticks also covered in dirt then threw one to Xuan. He brought out the baskets from the dimensional bag and said. “Talk later. Turn on the Sky Stick!”

The EMP rifle's barrel was changing in color, signifying it was overheating. Xuan connected the basket to the Sky Stick without a word then stepped on it. At the same time, lights glowed from beyond the sky like a meteor shower. Blue laser balls flew from one end to the other. Every one of them looked so big and magnificent.

Zheng and Xuan looked at each other. They knew most of the fleet were destroyed in this battle. The invasion was a complete failure. The movie didn't show it but the hundred thousand casualty was just the estimation for the mobile infantry. Those who died from the fleet increased this number to three hundred thousand.

“Everyone get on the baskets! Gando and Kampa get on one. The rest get on the other!” Zheng shouted and lifted the Sky Stick.

WangXia took out a timed bomb, set it up, then threw it at Kampa and Gando's direction. The blue light soared the area as plasma spheres emitted from the bomb. All the bugs that came in touch were instantly vaporized and those nearby became ignited. The bugs in this area backed off as if a layer of acid spread over the land. Kampa and Gando seized the change to run into the basket under Xuan. Then he lifted off.

Zheng followed closely and said to Lan who was beneath. “Connect my mind to Xuan. And keep an eye on any troopers nearby. If you find them then send the location to Zero.”

Lan gave an affirming response. Zheng said to Xuan. “Are the other two teams looking for us? I am afraid we might encounter the other teams if we head to the main character now. Everyone knows it will be safest staying next to the main character. If the other teams are also looking for cover there and teamed up, wouldn't we be walking right into a trap?”

“I actually wouldn't worry as much if that's the case.” Xuan replied calmly. “Because that would imply they hadn't become high ranking generals nor obtained any political power. Based on combat strength, we have over a 70% chance of winning. Your Explosion and Destruction techniques weren't counted in our rating and we are still the strongest team here. We have a high chance of winning if you use these techniques.”

“What we need to be worried is when they don't appear next to the main character. That would mean they obtained influence in this world, just like what you did in Resident Evil Apocalypse. You used the Umbrella Corporation but your methods were too foolish. We can leave this topic for later. The reason God allowed some teams to enter in advance was to let the weaker teams obtain enough influence to balance the strength of the teams. So you would rather pray that they are next to the main character. Then we will be able to force them into exchanging information or wipe them.”

Zheng exhaled. “Understand. If that's the case, I think we should rescue some troopers before approaching Platoon 6 and only use weapons from the federation. We can merge with the troopers to not appear out of place. So the other teams can't find us. What do you think?”

Xuan was surprised for a moment then thought for a bit. “My mistake that I didn't consider this. Human nature is full of curiosity. If they see us came over to the site assigned for Platoon 6, they will be curious as to how we got there. We will merge with a squad on the premise that we are safe just like you said. Wait until the rescue ships come then we will save

a squad with normal weapons.”

Zheng came out of the soul link conversation and said to Lan. “Take notice of any remaining troopers from Platoon 6 and the rescue ships that may come at any time.”

Lan’s voice came from below. “Zheng, a lot of flying organisms are approaching us at high speed. They will reach here in just a minute. Wait, let me send the image over!”

Zheng paused for a bit as the scan appeared in his mind. There were several hundred hopper bugs. Their speed was even faster than the Sky Stick. Based on the scan, these bugs were about three meters long and their wings opened up to six meters. They looked like enlarged dragonflies with sharp legs that could seemingly shred humans to pieces. The hideous look would send chills to everyone.

Lan had already sent the images to both Kampa and Gando which shocked the two of them. Kampa immediately turned the EMP rifle at that direction and began firing without even getting a clear look. Gando saw Kampa firing and followed suit. Zero set up the gauss sniper rifle and took aim. Soon, the hundreds of hopper bugs came into vision. These bugs moved so fast and their reaction speed was equally fast. Ten bugs in the front got shredded then the rest immediately spread to both sides. The bugs were suddenly closing in on the Sky Sticks from all sides like a net.

(What to do?! The jet system can speed away from the bugs but it won’t work for Xuan and the other two.)

“Descend! We will descend together! Lan, scan the ground to see if there are any holes! Hurry. Send the locations to WangXia and me. WangXia, set up the bombs so that they explode as soon as they touch the ground. We need to collapse the ground and blast the holes. We are relying on you! Hurry!”

Sweat covered Zheng’s forehead. If these hopper bugs caught up to them, he was the only one that could escape. They underestimated the bugs. The terrifying number would swarm them in a sea of bugs. Only forty seconds left. Zheng was screaming from within.

Xuan saw Zheng approaching the ground and followed suit. Lan didn't say anything as time passed by. She stood there quietly with her eyes closed. Then her body moved a bit. WangXia activated the bomb and threw it toward the ground. The Sky Sticks were twenty meters above the ground at this time. The bomb exploded as soon as it touched the ground. The blue plasma ripped apart the ground and revealed a hole underneath. A few bugs inside were burned to ashes.

There were several more holes connected to this one but Zheng had no time to consider. He charged right into the hole with the Sky Stick and shouted for them to hold on tight. Xuan, Kampa, and Gando followed closely. Right after the two Sky Sticks got in, the hopper bugs leaped down. The two sides were less than a hundred meters apart.

# Chapter 6-2

Kampa and Gando were quick to react in such dire situations. They aimed their guns at the entrance simultaneously and blasted the few hoppers near it. Then they heard the rocks cracked. Zheng collapsed the wall behind with a slash so the bugs coming out of the connected holes couldn't get to them.

Kampa and Gando looked at each other then came to a temporary cooperation. Kampa continued shooting ahead while Gando aimed at the top of the entrance. Multiple shots from the Gatling cannon broke off a large rock and it fell down to block off the entrance. The sound of hopper bugs tackling the entrance could still be heard at their end.

The group finally got to breathe heavily despite the dirt and dust in this cave. The cave was so dark that they couldn't even see their fingers. However, they felt much safer in comparison to the situation from before. Anything but a whole sky of hoppers.

The concept of safety didn't exist in the world of movies. They were still so weak after obtaining their powers. Zheng was the only one who could have escaped with his Explosion or Destruction if stuck in that situation. Everyone was powerless against the number and strength of these bugs. All they could do was take a few more bugs with them.

"We underestimated the bugs. They are not crops waiting for harvest. The movie worlds won't become easy just because we are stronger. God wouldn't make a theme park to give out free points." Zheng sighed.

They could hear the sound of digging through the rocks, especially from the entrance area. This sound gripped their hearts again. Zheng could see the bugs within the connected hole and the hopper bugs outside through Lan's scan. But there was more. A huge bug was digging itself up from under the ground. It would reach them in five minutes.

"Dangers are relative. You grew stronger so God threw you in more dangerous and more rewarding worlds, just like this movie. There may be worlds in the future such as Star Wars where a human's strength is

almost negligible. You can get killed in an instant no matter how strong you are.” Xuan was still looking so calm. He readied his pistols in his arms.

Zheng took a deep breath then said to everyone. “A huge bug is coming our way from underground. It should be a tanker bug judging by its size and shape. It will break apart this cave with any hit so we have to clear the hopper bugs outside within five minutes. Xuan, Gando, and I will begin the attack now. Kampa defend the entrance. Spray to your heart’s content as soon as you see any bugs come near. Don’t be afraid of hitting us. We have the dragonshard necklace. WangXia set up bombs on the ground. With a timer of four minutes and thirty seconds. Add a few mines for additional power.”

Gando was shocked and began crying in Fumoffu!

They were confused until Lan translated in a low voice. “Why do I have to go out for the attack? The Gatling cannon is so weak and isn’t near as powerful as the EMP rifle in killing bugs. Why do I have to attack too? That’s just pushing me to die!”

Zheng gave him a cold stare and said. “I am not going to say more than this. The robot’s defensive system isn’t weak. The Gundanium Alloy armor doesn’t break so easily. You also have a AOE attack by luring bugs to you. Isn’t this the best crowd battle ability here? We are a team. Everyone should be prepared to sacrifice himself. If you don’t have this realization, I don’t mind killing you right here!” Zheng raised Tiger’s Soul.

Gando immediately aimed the Gatling cannon at the people behind him. Time froze at this frame as they fell into silence until Xuan said without a hint of emotion. “Gando, I placed three plasma bombs inside the robot. If you get further than 50km away from me, the bomb will explode. If my heart stops beating for thirty seconds, the bomb will explode. The choice is yours.”

The bear robot was shaking. It lowered the Gatling cannon and muttered Fumoffu in a low voice.

The situation was urgent and Zheng didn’t look at him again. “Set the

timer to four minutes. Xuan, get up in the air and attack with your gun kata. Remember to stay in the unlocked mode. Gando, lure a big swarm of hopper bugs for the electrical attack. I will use Explosion. We must finish these bugs within four minutes!”

Zheng slashed the rocks blocking the entrance with Tiger’s Soul. After a few slashes, he broke the rocks with a kick. These shattered rocks flew out and knocked down several hopper bugs. Then the crimson light blade slashed them in halves.

Xuan charged out right after Zheng. The Sky Stick flew upward, instantly attracting dozens of hopper bugs to chase after him. Xuan had entered the unlocked mode. The gauss pistols were firing at every direction. But more and more bugs were crowding up on him. His gun kata was quite powerful. It covered every direction that he might get attacked. Dead bugs were dropping nonstop. The Sky Stick was also more agile than the hopper bugs under his control in the unlocked mode so nothing even got near ten meters of him.

Gando was the second to charge out. The bear robot didn’t have the best style and it cried in Fumoffu. If it wasn’t the Gatling cannon in its hands, one would have mistaken it for a comedic character.

Gando received a warm welcome just like Zheng and Xuan. Countless bugs flew at the robot. Those knife like wings that could cut humans in half hit the robot several times. The clanking sounds on the robot were nonstop and its fur had torn apart.

However, just like Zheng had said. The robot’s armor was made of Gundanium Alloy. Its toughness was extremely high. Almost all the wings that hit it got shattered, leaving only a faint trace of white on the armor. A few more tries later, the hopper bugs stopped attacking it with their wings and switched to their legs.

Gando was prepared to die when he charged out. However, seeing that the robot’s armor was so tough, he dropped his worry. He began firing the Gatling cannon but before long, a hopper bug slashed the Gatling cannon with its wings. Clank! The Gatling cannon broke in half. At the same

time, another hopper bug slashed its foot and knocked the robot down.

The fall dazed Gando for an instant. Before he could do anything, several bugs lifted the robot. More and more bugs were swarming up on it and began pulling the robot in midair. The Gundanium Alloy armor was tough but the robot's joints were not so much. Gando could hear the tearing sound coming from the robot's joints. If the robot got torn apart, he would be exposed to these hopper bugs, a human without any abilities. The only thing that awaited him was death!

Gando cried with his heart. The fall had almost swapped the location of his arms and legs in the cockpit. His hands were so far away from the control panel. His eyes slowly went out of focus then he grabbed the joystick with his legs. The robot's arms pushed forward and pushed away the bugs on the robot's head. Gando flipped himself around in the cockpit and his hands reached for both the blue and red buttons.

## Chapter 6-3

Blue light shone from the robot's chest. Szz. The nearest hopper bug was burned into a charcoal. The bear robot swung its hands and crushed this charcoal. At the same time, the blue light spread out rapidly and enveloped the robot in a six-meter area. The light only lasted for a second but it burned over twenty bugs. The robot moved its arms and broke all the charcoals.

Once the bugs surrounding the robot were gone, it started to fall. Dozens of bugs immediately flew in to fill the space. The robot was only falling from a ten-meter height. As it almost touches the ground, the metallic humps on its back finally opened up. Blue electricity spurted out and pushed it forward right before it touched the ground. Hopper bugs that were charging at it hit the ground instead. And the robot finally made it out of danger temporarily.

(My body's still numb from the electrical attack. This state will persist for two seconds. Needs five seconds to recharge after the electrical attack. Which means I can't dodge with full capacity for two seconds and can't attack for five seconds. If I get caught, the robot's joints won't be able to sustain five seconds of pulls.)

Gando felt the world had changed. It was a sensation indescribable with words. Endless information streamed into his head, what actions to take, how to move his hands, what steps should the robot take, its balance, speed, and strength.

The speed under the electrical jets that he couldn't take control of during training felt so easy now. His control gave the robot such fine and agile movements while the jets pushed its speed to an extreme. The robot glided short distances with every jump. The hopper bugs couldn't catch up to it in a short period of time.

(Just running isn't going to do it. Among people who still have power, can't count on Zheng, Xuan is flying around, is he in the same mental state? Kampa is the only one left. But how am I going to tell him the

plan? I recall Lan said she will monitor every member's mental state. Lan! Connect me with Kampa's mind!)

Gando was thinking intensely on how to survive. If he got caught again, he could only use the electrical attack but that also meant he couldn't dodge at full capacity for two seconds and five more seconds before the next attack. This was his fatal weakness so he didn't even dare to stop. The only thing he could think of was have someone clear the bugs behind him.

As he looked over, Zheng's whole person was blurry. He couldn't see Zheng clearly due to his movement speed. Zheng also attracted and killed the most hopper bugs. A thick layer of dead bugs piled on the ground. Every swing of Tiger's Soul brought down several more. In comparison to Zheng's inhumane movements and attacks, Xuan's gunning style was like magic. Continuous change of the pistols' direction that killed one to two bugs every time and the smooth movements of the Sky Stick could only be described with perfection. However, the perfect attacks of these two people meant that they couldn't give Gando any help. All he could do was keep on running.

The hopper bugs flew faster than the robot. He pulled away their distance several times with sharp changes in direction using his insane control. Even then, the bugs were still slowly closing in on him. The nearest one only five meters away. Gando's heart was slowly being filled with coldness, despair and anger.

"This is Kampa. What is it?"

The voice sounded in his mind. This voice almost gave him a shock but also brought out his desire to live. He immediately shouted within his mind. "Help me, Kampa! I will line the bugs up by the cave entrance. Help me! If this amount of bugs catch up to me, then I will..."

"Understood. There's still some time before the rifle overheats. Lure them over! I will let you take control of the firing!" Kampa paused for a moment then said.

Gando exhaled deeply. His hand movements were barely visible to the

naked eyes. The bear robot was running back and forth in abnormal movements and dragged all the hopper bugs to a straight line. The robot suddenly jumped then rolled on the ground.

At the same time, Gando shouted. "Fire!"

A flare shot out from the cave entrance along with countless needle bullets. The hopper bug nearest to Gando was torn to pieces. The bugs behind continued pushing forward due to momentum. Dead bugs started piling right behind the robot.

"Great!" Zheng was still in Explosion. But the energy rings made him feel less stressful. He began talking to Lan over soul link. "Great newbie. He very similar to me. Someone that can breakthrough with ease in the direst situations. And becoming a part of the team isn't just a verbal agreement. The team has to be good to him and he has to give for the team. Lan, how many bugs left?"

Lan paused for a moment. "137 hopper bugs left. Based on our speed, it should take about a minute. But your body..."

Zheng was still in Explosion. The Tiger's Soul was powerful but the dragonshard was almost useless against close combat organisms. The bugs could attack his body. He couldn't neglect the bugs' speed even in Explosion. His body was filled with wounds at this point. The worst cut was a large one on his right chest, deep enough to see his bone. A hopper bug cut it with its wings. Fortunately, his recovery rate was incredible. These wounds had stopped bleeding and cicatrized. So none of these wounds were critical.

"No problem. My body can still handle it. However, I can't sustain Explosion for another minute."

Zheng slashed a bug near him then clenched his teeth and exited Explosion. The bugs rapidly closed in on him due to their speed. Two more cuts appeared on his body in just a moment. Lan screamed from inside the cave. She almost charged out if it wasn't for Kampa blocking the entrance. So she cried out by the entrance.

Zheng wasn't looking to kill himself. He brought out the Bracelet of

Anubis the moment he exited the unlocked mode. Blood energy started pouring into the bracelet. The army of Anubis rose from the ground and surrounded him with their three-meter-tall bodies as these bugs charge at him. One of the warriors slashed at the bugs with its sword.

After Zheng depleted his blood energy, he poured Qi into Tiger's Soul. The crimson light blade grew longer and longer. Its color also turning into a deep red. He waited for a hundred hopper bugs to dive down then jumped up with the movement technique. He stepped on the shoulder of a warrior. With both hands holding onto Tiger's Soul, he slashed his sword in a circular motion. He was also draining Qi from the ring into Tiger's Soul. The attack range at this time was about twenty meters. The invisible part of the light blade slashed across numerous bugs. Broken pieces of their bodies rained from midair. After most of these bugs were killed, Zheng fell from the warrior's shoulder and lay on the ground exhausted. The army of Anubis guarded him from all directions.

# Chapter 7-1

Bugs, especially the hopper bugs. Their attacks were horrifying. A quick glide with a hopper bug's wings cut off a dozen heads from the warriors of Anubis and turn them back into sand. Fortunately, there were several hundreds of these warriors that a dozen wasn't a big deal. Numerous big swords slashed at it and soon cut this bug to pieces. Then another one charged into them.

The scene depicted the fight of quality versus quantity. As long as the difference in quality wasn't night and day, like that of humans against ants, or humans with guns against monkeys, then there was no possibility of a single being destroying countless other lives. Even with Zheng's power, dead was the only thing that awaited him if he were to fought thousands of hopper bugs.

Similarly, when the number of bugs had become so little in contrast to the hundreds of warriors, those dozen remaining bugs got cut to pieces as soon as they charged into the army. Their agility and strength were futile in front of such numbers.

On the other side, Xuan finished the hundred bugs that swarmed him. Kampa and Gando shredded dozens with their coordination. Only two bugs left but before they got to do anything, bang! A powerful bullet shattered both of them.

Zheng made an effort to absorb the remaining Qi and blood energy from the two rings. A few seconds later, he stood up. He recovered about 20% of Qi and 30% of blood energy by now. Not enough for a whole fight in Explosion but enough for him to move.

Zheng quickly ran back to the cave and yelled. "WangXia, take out the Sky Stick! F\*ck, more bugs are coming!"

Under the psyche scan, several larger bugs were coming their way. Fortunately, rocks blocked their large bodies. They could also see that all the hopper bugs were cleared. Now they just had to levitate within a minute to free themselves from danger.

Kampa rushed out from the cave carrying Lan on his back. WangXia and Zero followed carrying the Sky Stick and basket on top. As soon as they threw the two items on the ground, Zheng stepped on the Sky Stick. Lan, WangXia, and Zero entered the basket. Right at this crucial moment, the damaged robot suddenly rolled on the ground and cried in Fumoffu.

Lan yelled. "It's bad! Gando unlocked the genetic constraint in the fight and he's suffering the after effect. His whole body is spasming. He can't breathe, almost going to suffocate. He can't even get himself on the basket!"

Zheng was going to get down but then he saw Xuan's action and lifted off. "Lan, spend some attention to scan the surviving squads. We need to find a target to merge into. Oh, and don't ease on monitoring the sky. Tell me when you find the rescue ships."

The bear robot was facing their side as it rolled. Gando clenched his teeth tightly. The extreme pain had made him bite them so hard that his mouth was full of blood. His muscles twitching violently. He couldn't even find the strength to move. His breathing was getting shorter and shorter. He was almost going to faint. The pain from unlocking the genetic constraint for the first time wasn't something a normal person could withstand.

Gando slowly closed his eyes in this pain. He could only breathe when his body twitched from the pain. Then he felt the cockpit shook and opened his eyes to look at the screen. Xuan and Kampa were carrying the robot from both sides to the basket. This robot was small but it still took them twenty seconds to walk the eight-meter distance. Kampa gave a shout and threw it into the basket. Xuan then stepped onto the Sky Stick and flew up. The ground began trembling.

Kampa laughed out loudly. He had returned to normal from the werewolf transformation and slapped the bear robot on the shoulder. "Nice kid. Never expected you to unlock the genetic constraint in your first fight. It seemed like chasing you with the electric stick for so long didn't go to waste. Haha. That was thanks to you or we wouldn't have been able to kill so many bugs in such a short period."

Gando didn't reply. He adjusted the screen to look down at the ground. A mound rose from the ground after the trembling. Then a seven-meter-tall and ten-meter-long huge red bug dug itself out. It aimed its mouth at the air and shot out a pillar of fire. The fire got up to fifteen meters. They could feel the heat despite being so far from it.

Kampa and Gando looked at each other. Then he aimed the overheated EMP rifle down. Xuan said. "There's no need. Five more seconds."

The two were confused for a moment then looked below. Aside from the first tanker bug, countless bugs also dig out from the ground. If they were just twenty seconds slower, these bugs would have devoured them.

"Time's up!"

"Time." On the other Sky Stick, WangXia was holding onto the pulse on his wrist and said to the others. At almost the same instant, blue light flashed and numerous blue plasma spheres shot out. All the bugs that got in contact were vaporized and anything nearby was burned to ashes. These plasma spheres were much more powerful than lightning or electrical attacks. They were a phenomenon of highly concentrated electricity.

The bundle of one timed bomb with several plasma mines created enough spheres to fill a hundred-meter area. The heat extended up to two hundred meters. Two more tanker bugs dug out from the ground. Then the series of explosions wiped a large area of them. WangXia's points suddenly jumped in hundreds and was nearing a thousand. They were still in danger but he still couldn't contain his laughter.

Zheng was controlling the Sky Stick. He received the explosion images through Lan. He let out a sigh of relief seeing so many points were killed. Then asked. "Lan, have you found any surviving squads? What about Platoon 6?"

Lan sighed. "Platoon 1 landed first and had been wiped. Then Platoon 2 and 3 followed. Our Platoon 4 only has a thousand remaining behind a hill. Platoon 5 is almost done. Though there's a group of a few hundred gathering scattered troopers. They are moving toward Platoon 6. Platoon

6 has the most people but also a lot of bugs chasing them. They are heading our way.”

Those who landed first died the earliest. Zheng nodded. He knew they underestimated the bugs. Over a hundred thousand casualties within just a few hours, most were from the ground units. This was partially caused by abnormality in their weapons. This sci-fi universe didn't have a mechanical ground unit. Furthermore, it was dangerous for the seven of them from just several hundred hopper bugs.

“Zheng, I found something interesting. Where do you think the team that just scanned our location is at?” Xuan voice appeared in his mind. He knew Lan had connected Xuan through soul link.

Zheng thought for a moment. “Platoon 6? You think we are going to meet them when we arrive at Platoon 6?”

Xuan said. “No. They can't be in Platoon 6 because this will lead them to meet us face to face. You have to know that their biggest advantage is arriving in this world earlier than us and was able to create their ‘influence’, not in fighting us directly. We are stronger than them. The most likely outcome in a direct team fight is we wiping the two teams.”

“If I am in their place, they won't want to enter a team fight now nor expose their location so we can find them. The battlefield is also dangerous. We can barely protect ourselves here so as the weaker teams, they won't be able to survive the sea of bugs easily while fighting us. The only possibility that made them search for us under such situation is they believe they are currently safe. If that's the case, the safest place in this battlefield isn't next to the main character but rather among the bugs!”

Zheng as shocked. A safe place among the bugs? What did this mean? He quickly said. “Do you mean that God put them...”

Xuan said with certainty. “Yes. God put them on the bug's side, just like how team India was on the side of Imhotep. One of the teams is an ally of the bugs!”

Zheng exhaled deeply. “If that's true then are those hopper bugs sent by the team after they scanned us? Aren't we in great danger now?”

Xuan shook his head. “There wouldn’t be too much danger. They probably shouldn’t have the influence to order an army of bugs. Or it wouldn’t have been just several hundred bugs. My speculation is they belong to the bugs but don’t have the authority to order any bugs. All they could do was give the results of their scans over to the brain bug via soul link. We are in danger because the brain bug knows our location but it won’t give up the lives of the rest of the federation force for us. So once we reach Platoon 6, we will be much safer. However, there are two questions that can’t be answered.”

“One is where’s the other team? Are they not in this battlefield?”

“Two is God wants us to survive twenty days. Under what conditions? Can we just live through these twenty days like a trip? No, based on our understanding of God, something that wasn’t in the movie is bound to happen. Something that will force the three teams fight. But what is it? There’s definitely a detail that I haven’t found out. I can’t continue the analysis without it. What is this detail?”

## Chapter 7-2

The conversation between Zheng and Xuan happened in their minds so the others couldn't know about it. Everyone else was focused on the battlefield. Such a bloody and deadly battlefield was never seen by even Kampa. Blood, corpses, and broken body parts spread throughout the ground like a collection center of human bodies. Occasionally a few bugs dug themselves out but got shot down by Kampa and Zero.

“This is too brutal. The number of bugs is way too much. No wonder they wiped the human army in just several hours.” Kampa stared at the ground. There weren't many bugs visible but the surface was rippling. No one knew how many bugs were hidden under the surface.

Zero stood his rifle up and asked Zheng. “What are we going to do? We can't just fly into Platoon 6.”

Zheng had come out of the conversation. He thought for a bit and replied. “Lan, how is the group of several hundred troopers now? They got wiped yet?”

Lan closed her eyes for a moment. “No. Their number is increasing as they gather the scattered troopers on the way. The leader is actually quite good. They chose the hard surfaces to walk on so the bugs couldn't attack from beneath. They also focused fire when attacking the bugs and killed a few on the way. They are close to Platoon 6, about ten more minutes before meeting up.”

Zheng said. “Ok. We will land behind them then follow the path they cleared to catch up. Merge into this group then meet Platoon 6.”

Lan passed the message to the three people on the other side then said. “Ok, I have passed the message. I will send their location, a map of the terrain and the spread of bugs to you.”

Zheng nodded. The images appeared in his mind. On the other side of a hill not far from them was a group of about a thousand troopers. Their conditions were not good. Most troopers were wounded. Some without an arm or leg. However, the baptism with blood cleared away some of that

fear they had. They could now fire back against the bugs in coordination. Small groups of bugs became less of a threat to them.

“Let’s land here. It’s a hill so they can’t see us. Put away our equipment then head over. We should catch up to them in five minutes.” Zheng chose a hill from the map that couldn’t be seen from the other side. This hill was not far away from the group.

The dim atmosphere of this planet helped them. Normal people could only see one to two hundred meters away. The troopers weren’t players with enhancements. So no one saw the Sky Stick. After they landed, everyone put the weapons back into the dimensional bag. Then Zheng brought out the weapons from the federation. Kampa complained as he received the weapon. These garbage rifles were actually the weapons in a sci-fi world.

“Ok. Run up the hill. It should only be a few minutes. There are some bugs on the way but these guns are enough to kill them. Let’s go. We are basically safe after meeting Platoon 6!” Zheng patted Kampa on the shoulder and looked at Gando. His body was still shivering.

Xuan said. “Zheng, if the group happen to encounter a swarm of bugs, you should show strength equivalent to the maximum a normal person can achieve. It’s fine even if you go over by a bit. It’s best if you can lead some of the troopers like you usually do. If you can become a sergeant or lieutenant, our plans will be much more convenient. You get what I mean?”

Zheng nodded. He checked the gun then carried Lan on his back.

The seven of them moved very fast. Lan and Gando had weaker bodies so they were being carried. Kampa got Gando on his back. They ran after the group of troopers and killed several bugs on the way. The federation’s weapons were just so weak. Hits on the bugs’ exoskeletons only caused flares. The only effective targets were the eyes and mouth. Fortunately, their focus fire was good enough and Xuan had the gauss pistols hidden under his sleeves. He was the only person that retained power. If too many bugs came, he would just use the gauss pistols to clear them.

They caught up to the group after a few minutes. Or one could say the troopers at the back noticed them. These ten troopers aimed their guns at them in the beginning until a sergeant shouted them to stop. When the troopers found out that these seven people were humans, everyone let out a sigh of relief. Zheng and the others could tell that this group had been startled. They could still fight but their mental states were breaking apart. This was a sign of struggling before death.

The sergeant waved his arm at Zheng's group. He let out a sigh of relief after they came over. "What a miracle you survived with just seven people. You, the heavily injured one, go get bandaged in the center. The five of you report to the lieutenant. You head to the center too. All women are taking care of the injured in the center."

The sergeant had Zheng go get bandaged. His body was covered in blood but in reality his wounds were almost fully healed. The wound did look a bit scary. Zheng thought for a bit then gestured them to go. He headed to the center of the group with Lan.

It felt rather magnificent when a thousand people gathered together. Zheng said to Lan in a low voice. "Connect me to Xuan and pay attention to the spread of bugs. Tell me immediately if the bugs are gathering in a large group. It's fine if we clear this area again with our weapons. The most important thing is our safety."

Lan nodded. Zheng connected with Xuan's mind. Xuan was heading to a group of officers who were arguing. An officer with a metallic arm shouted. "We Roughnecks killed our way out of the sea of bugs but we have lost over 70% of our people. The majority of troopers joining the group are new recruits. Our only hope is to meet up with Platoon 6 and defend until the rescue ships come using our advantage in number. And you want me to go save a squad from Platoon 5? Why don't you just go die?"

Xuan frowned and said to Zheng. "Heard it? This is the Roughnecks. They killed the most bugs in the movie and one of the units that got back alive. If the other team isn't inside these thousand troopers, we have over 80% chance of returning to the spaceship."

Zheng also frowned and said to Lan in a low voice. “Is there a psyche force user in this group? Or anyone that can mask your scan?”

Lan shook her head. “No. Only normal people. I don’t sense any scans or masks. If there’s someone like that, I wouldn’t have been able to find this group. He could just mask the whole area.”

Zheng let out a sigh of relief. He told the others not to move and wait for him to get there. In the center of the group were about three hundred people who could still move and ten barely staying alive. A representation of the destructiveness of war. The ten critically injured lost all their limbs. Their stomach torn open exposing the intestines. But they were lucky to be still alive. About two hundred female troopers on acting as sentries or providing the medical aids. However, fear was obvious on their expressions. Any little change would rack up their nervousness. This group seemed like disowned dogs. The troopers covering the retreat at the back were elites in comparison.

Zheng bandaged himself up then he heard a racket coming from the left. The group was turning into a chaos over there. A pillar of fire shot up and a tanker bug appeared.

# Chapter 8-1

Zheng jumped. The others couldn't use their weapons so they were fragile in front of this tanker bug. This bug appeared quite suddenly. Lan had been monitoring the underground the whole time. Yet she didn't discover this tanker bug. Zheng also didn't sense it as he was connected in soul link the whole time. Which meant this bug was masked by another psyche force user. It was an attack by the other team!

Zheng ran as he said in urgency. "Lan, mask this whole group even if it reduces your scan range. F\*ck, we were too careless. They have been waiting for us to put down our weapons!"

"We were indeed careless... We had been holding our weapons so they didn't bother masking the bugs even when they knew of our location. The bugs weren't a threat to us unless they came in hundreds of hopper bugs. So they waited for us to merge into this group and masked the bugs that were going to attack us. Good strategy..." Xuan murmured.

The team looked at the tanker bug from afar. They had no choice but to dodge away. These federation weapons would merely scratch the tanker bug. Furthermore, since it unburrowed in the middle of the group, they couldn't use the tactical nukes. Everyone was scattering. Every time the tanker bug sprayed flame, a few to a dozen people were burned to ashes. More and more bugs were coming out of the hole where the tanker bug unburrowed.

Xuan said in a low voice. "Wait and see. If necessary, we will wipe the area. Kill all the bugs and humans here, then find a way to merge into Platoon 6. It seems like there might be a change of plot that the Roughnecks die here. I am curious though if that other team will obtain points and rewards for the Roughnecks' death."

"Now is not the time to think about these. Find a way to escape first!"

Zheng over and heard Xuan calmly analyzed while the tanker bug was spraying flame at people. He didn't seem like he was in a battlefield but rather discussing in a classroom. When Zheng came over to them, Xuan

suddenly asked. “Do you still remember how the main character killed the first tanker bug in the movie?”

He was going to run with the team but this question stopped him. Zheng nodded. “You wouldn’t want me to go fight with Tiger’s Soul? Even though it can easily kill the tanker bug but don’t you think that’s out of a normal person’s capability? Slicing a ten meter bug in halves with a sword?”

Xuan waved his hand and said sarcastically. “Not telling you to do that. What you need to do is use a normal weapon, jump on its back, and shoot it. Shoot a hole in its back then throw a normal grenade in. Bang. You will become a sergeant or even a sergeant major. This identify is helpful to our following actions.”

“You are not wrong but...” Zheng pointed to the tanker bug and said. “You want me to kill this tanker bug while only showing strength that a normal person should have? And why does that sarcastic look on your face seemed to be saying ‘You have a fifty percent chance of dying?’”

Xuan’s expression didn’t change. “Correct. Judging by the speed these bugs are coming out of the ground, you have a seventy percent chance of dying if you go to kill the tanker bug unless you use Explosion and Tiger’s Soul. In two minutes, you won’t be able to even get close to the tanker bug. Make your choice. Oh, and in order to get the lieutenants’ attentions, see the grenade on that lieutenant’s waist? Go grab it and use it to kill the tanker bug. The usual rules. Try your best. When it gets too dangerous, kill everyone here with Tiger’s Soul.”

Zheng smiled bitterly. No matter how long it had been, Xuan’s plans were still similarly crazy, but it was also the most beneficial plan. He took a deep breath and sprint toward the lieutenant.

(A normal person’s strength can’t jump so high. Limit to 30% qi usage. Use the movement technique to assist. Then... fight for our lives!)

Zheng’s physical stats were much higher than a normal person, especially in strength and speed. The addition of the movement technique allowed him to sprint over to the lieutenant in just a few seconds. He

grabbed the grenades on the lieutenant's waist and charged away during his shock.

The lieutenant reacted instantly. He was only shocked for a moment then gave a shout as loud as he can. "F\*ck! Everyone clear him a way! Kill all the bugs on the ground!" He raised his assault rifle and shot the eyes of a bug.

These troopers around were obviously elites. These should be the remaining troopers of the Roughnecks. They immediately focused fire on bugs on the ground. They had incredible accuracy, getting the bugs' eyes and mouth with almost every shot. Many bugs were killed off in this shooting.

Zheng entered the third stage of the unlocked mode as he ran. He recalled YingKong's movements and ran along those miraculous steps. Though he was quite troubled that he couldn't run at full speed. He had to control himself as he ran. This short distance of not even a hundred meters took him twenty seconds since he had to ran around in left and right. He jumped on a bug's corpse and used it to jump further. Three meters high got him close to the tanker bug's leg.

The troopers held their breaths as they all stared at him. What people in a war of despair needed weren't bullets or weapons but a hope. The Roughnecks were one such hope. And now, Zheng was another hope. Everyone was hoping for a miracle. No one actually believed Zheng could kill this tanker bug but they still screamed from within.

Kill it!

Zheng had to swallow the bitterness himself. It wasn't that he couldn't climb up to the tanker bug, all it took was a flip but that was out of a normal person's capability. Fighting with a performance of a normal person was more difficult than fighting at full strength... The feeling of not being able to use his strength was terrible.

He pulled out the army knife and stabbed it into the bug's exoskeleton. He flipped himself up while he pulled out the knife and stabbed again. After three repetitions, he got on the bug's back. The bug moved violently

as it seemed to understand what was happening. This bumping was useful against normal people but not to someone in the unlocked mode. Information of the bumping entered his head and he quickly balanced himself.

Zheng held the rifle on the bug's exoskeleton and held the trigger. No matter how weak this rifle was, its destructiveness will accumulate with such concentrated impacts. The rifle finally broke the exoskeleton after several seconds. Zheng pulled the ring from the grenade without a second thought and threw it down. He jumped off the tanker bug while the bug charged around. He rolled on the ground and hit a warrior bug's teeth. Those teeth immediately punctured his right arm. At the same time, a big explosion came from behind.

# Chapter 8-2

“Good! Survivor from Platoon 4? We have about a hundred from Platoon 4 here but Platoon 4, 5 and 6 are supposedly all new recruits. Your actions are more experienced than even the veterans. Many of the sergeants in my Platoon died and we are missing a sergeant major. You will take his place before you die. Zheng, organize the troops to advance!”

Lieutenant Jean Razak ordered the troopers to save Zheng from the bugs after he blew up the tanker bug. The group backed off as they continued firing. Once they got further away, he ordered the troopers to bomb the hole with tactical nuke. A loud blast and mushroom cloud collapsed this bug hole.

Zheng wasn't in a great condition. The bug's teeth punctured his arm and bone. He couldn't move his right arm in a short period of time despite his insane recovery. Damage on the bone needed at least a day to recovery.

He left a great impression to Jean Razak for taking the risk at such a dangerous situation. Not only did he killed the tanker bug but also saved this group from collapsing. So the lieutenant assigned him to the sergeant major position temporarily and promoted him to corporal.

Unfortunately, Zheng was terrible at commanding a large army. He had experience leading a group of several or a dozen like a special force unit leader. So he handed off the responsibility to Xuan, Kampa, and WangXia. These three who were from the army performed much better than him.

“Fools.” Xuan sneered at the federal armed force. Those idiotic politicians and generals ordered an invasion against the bugs with infantry. The bugs had an advantage fighting with their bodies. There were also barely any heavy firearms and mechanical units. All the advantage they could get from artillery, air force, and high tech weapons were none existent. This army was basically sent here to die.

“That was not the only thing. This army doesn't even have the basic rules of an army. This is unbelievable. Such an army couldn't exist in the

real world. There's definitely something we don't know about the history of this world. You can use your identity as the corporal to look it up in the internet after we go back. I want to find out what caused this." Xuan held his hand under his chin and murmured.

"You are not wrong but we should deal with the current situation first. What did Platoon 6 said?" Zheng smiled bitterly.

Xuan said. "They have 8600 people left. However, 3000 in the back are caught in the fight with the bugs. At most 5000 will meet up with us. The majority of this group are injured or lost the will to fight. If we get surrounded again, there's an 80% chance of getting killed if we don't run with the Sky Sticks."

Zheng nodded and turned to Lan. "Did you find the other group's location. Since they used psyche force to mask the bugs, they shouldn't be too far away. Or is their psyche force user more powerful than you? That doesn't seem possible."

Lan nodded. "20km away. There's an area 500 meters under the ground that I can't scan. However, a lot of bugs near that area is coming at us. You wouldn't be planning to run over and attack them?"

Zheng laughed and rubbed her hair. "Don't worry. I am not so reckless. If I haven't been injured, they are not too far from the ground, and there are no bugs, we could go over with the Sky Stick. But there are no if's. Hoho. We are doing our best to avoid them. Don't worry about me getting myself killed. I don't have such hobby."

Kampa had been checking the wound on his right arm. It had stopped bleeding but the wound was deep. He shook his head. "Complete puncture through the bone. Judging by your recovery rate, if we can't get something to hold your bones in position within twelve hours, we will have to break it again. Or else your recovery rate will grow them back in abnormal forms. Haha. Seems like you are going to suffer again."

Zheng could only smile bitterly as Kampa wrapped his arm with bandage.

Once he received status as the sergeant major, he began commanding

this army of a thousand. Xuan's ability was effective in positioning the army and advancing. Their speed became much faster and the rate of casualties in the back line decreased. Xuan and WangXia set up several tactical nukes at the hills they passed by and killed a large number of bugs. These kills counted toward the whole team to their surprise. Though they weren't much when spread evenly to everyone.

The increase in ability and effectiveness of the army was clear to the lieutenants. After their attacks at the hills, Jean Razak made Zheng's temporary sergeant major position permanent.

An hour later, they met with the vanguard of Platoon 6. Well, not exactly vanguard since these were troopers who threw away their weapons so they could run faster. Some had gone insane and ignored any shouting from the Roughnecks. These troopers continued running ahead until Xuan ordered a group of troopers to fire. A hundred deaths calmed the rest of the vanguards, or perhaps instilled fear.

Gando looked at those corpses and blood. His body trembled as he said with a shaky voice. "Is this man a devil? Would he hesitate or be scared? F\*ck. He just issued an order like this. These are not the bugs."

Zheng patted Gando's shoulder which almost scared him. When he noticed it was Zheng, he looked back away with complex feelings. Zheng said slowly. "He's just like this. But this is already much better than the him before. Hoho. I can't describe what actually improved but at least he won't handle team members in the same way anymore. He used to handle the team in the same way. I swear he's scheming how to take care of you. Like a trap for you to step into or a scheme where you are going to die for certain yet everything will seem natural. He has definitely started with this when you aimed the gun at us."

Gando jumped and shouted. "Impossible! He saved me back there!"

The people around immediately looked at him.

Gando exhaled and said in a low voice. "This man isn't human. He analyzed so much with just some signs. And his plans are cold blooded. Killing everyone in the area! Zheng, I haven't done anything unforgivable

to the team. It was just a subconscious reaction raising the gun at them. I did fight with my life right?”

He was clearly scared of Xuan. When he realized that Xuan might have an intention to kill him for what he did, his body trembled and he grabbed Zheng's arm.

Zheng felt a pain on his right arm but he didn't stop Gando. He took out a pack of cigarette with his left arm and handed one to Gando. Then said in a slow tone. “I am not going to say much. There's just one thing you have to remember. We are comrades that fight and die together. You might not understand this right now but you can think about it yourself. When you are staying alive simply for staying alive, when you can abandon everything, when you can betray everyone, will you feel lonely and tire? Even orphans will feel lonely and tire when they get hurt.”

# Chapter 8-3

Lonely and tired?

Gando smoked the cigarette quietly. For some reason, he was scared of looking at Zheng after hearing this. The feeling was difficult to describe. Like he was afraid of obtaining something or hoping to obtain something impossible. He headed to the center of the group following their plan and continued protecting Lan.

But... lonely and tired?"

The group kept on going. The Roughnecks finally met up with the majority of Platoon 6. There were about 5000 troopers remaining as Xuan had expected. 40% of them still had their weapons and could fight. 2000 uninjured. The rest either were injured or threw away their weapons. Johnny Rico was unconscious due to loss of blood. Xuan somehow found him from the several hundred people. His leg had a puncture by bug teeth but unfortunately, he didn't have the same recovery rate as Zheng. His life was at risk if he couldn't get treatment within twelve hours.

The highest ranked officer among the group was a major. Though this major also fell unconscious. His whole arm got torn off. The officers of both groups came to a conclusion and handed command to Razak. Thus, Zheng became a sergeant major of both groups and his military rank rose to sergeant. He was allowed to join in on the officer meetings.

"Are these the squad leaders you assigned?" Razak tapped Zheng's shoulder and pointed at Xuan who was speaking to several troopers and Kampa and Wangxia who were picking gunners and scouts. He seemed interested in these three troopers.

Zheng nodded. "Yes. They escaped the sea of bugs with me."

Razak said. "Let them know that they are corporals until they die. And get in touch with the starship. Tell those assholes to send in rescue ships or see a report of the army annihilated!"

Zheng smiled bitterly. He got an idea of the situation through soul link.

There are still functioning communication devices in Platoon 6 but all the starships they could reach either ran away or destroyed. There was no sending in rescue ships to help them. A weight fell on their hearts after twenty minutes of trying to get in contact. The officers felt that the federation had abandoned them.

However, the wait didn't continue much longer. Ten more minutes later, they received a reply. The higher ups in the federation weren't all idiots. When they noticed the starships getting destroyed and over 80% of the infantry had died, they gathered backups. The message they received was the first wave of backups would arrive in seven hours. They had to survive for seven hours in this battlefield.

Razak apparently had decent self control. He didn't curse out directly but the other officers, not so much. They cursed the higher ups as trash and was gradually getting enraged. Well to think of it, every minute they stayed here meant ten more casualties. They were getting surrounded by bugs. When the bugs fully surround them, all they could do is keep firing until the bugs eat them.

Razak turned to Zheng. "Sergeant major, do you have any advices? You look like something's on your mind. Speak it out."

Zheng immediately relayed the message to Lan who then connected him to Xuan.

"Ahem." Zheng paused for a good twenty seconds. The others thought he was organizing his words. He repeated what Xuan said. "Can't decentralize our forces. Our numbers are low to begin with. We need the firepower in order to fight the bugs. Can't abandon the injured. That will take a hit to our morale, which will drive the army into a passive position. The scouts had just found a small mountain. We can reach the top in about an hour. There is only one road that isn't wide leading up. However, the top of the mountain is fairly big. As long as we can defend that road and have a part of the troopers defend against the hopper bugs, we are likely to survive this seven hours."

Razak pondered for several seconds. "The biggest casualties come from

marching. Many places, the ground just collapses and the bugs beneath will kill all the troopers that fall. An hour of marching meant one to two thousand deaths. Why not choose to garrison nearby? The terrain here isn't as advantageous but the flat area is also good for firing.”

Zheng heard a sigh from Xuan. He was obviously not content with the suggestion. The lack of knowledge in tactics from these lieutenants were equivalent to their lack of heavy firearms. Their trainings were excellent but only in the combat level.

“Because what we are afraid of isn't the bugs gathering from afar. The firepower with two thousand troopers can kill off even tanker bugs charging at us or the high speed hopper bugs. Similarly, we have our weakness. Any bug could kill a dozen troopers if it gets in close range. So how can bugs get near us? Ambush from under the ground. Once we garrison at one place, this type of ambushes wouldn't stop. However, the top of a mountain is different in that its height and rocks can prevent the ambushes. We have to act fast before the bugs located us!”

The army received the order to march within five minutes. These lieutenants couldn't find a point to refute the plan. They handed the army to Zheng's group. Razak said to the other lieutenants. “Looks like we found an incredible sergeant major. This guy can join tactical department. No, those fools in the department is probably worse.”

Zheng, or you could say Xuan's ability gained acknowledgement among the lieutenants. The team obtained control over the army in the march. Lan's psyche scan in combination with the gunners under Kampa's leader and scouts under WangXia's lead transformed the army into one with actual strength. The training these troopers went through weren't terrible. They just didn't know how to cooperate.

“I get the situation.” Xuan was ordering the army through communication devices while he still had the time to speak with Zheng.

“The civilization of this Earth has a flaw. I learned through conversation with some people that the third World War nearly destroyed Earth. The government that formed post World War emitted heavy

control on the possibility of wars starting. The next several hundreds were completely war free. Civilian technology evolved while military tech was suppressed by the government. Furthermore, military theories, tactics, and training went in an abnormal direction. The government of this Earth has totally forgotten what war is like because humans can't initiate war against themselves anymore. The Arachnids exposed how far behind they were in everything concerning the military.”

“This is a bonus mission, Zheng. I can't be certain but it should be at least a BB or even A tier bonus mission to help the federation recover in their military technologies and qualities.”

# Chapter 9-1

The scouts chosen by WangXia located the possible bug traps, such as hollow undergrounds. Xuan assigned WangXia to carry out this task using the troopers.

Though since this was on the Arachnid's planet and the scout's team only had a little more than a dozen people, WangXia had to rely on Lan's scan to avoid the bugs' ambushes. That in turn raised his prestige among the scouts. Before long, he had gained complete trust among the scouts.

Kampa experienced the same situation in the gunner team. He and WangXia's trainings were hellish compared to what these troopers went through, which made them elites in this high tech era.

Xuan controlled the whole army's positioning and movements. WangXia led the scouts in the front and Kampa covered the back. They became an irreplaceable part of this army. Zheng and the others had not much use aside from Lan. She was in a way, a human communication device.

"It might be the case. I know there are a lot of bonus missions in this world but..." Zheng said with a bitter smile. "Don't you feel that we are attracting too much attention? The whole army almost see us as saviors. The movie didn't mention how they escaped but there was also no such saviors. Wouldn't this make the other team notice us?"

Xuan replied calmly. "It has to be done due to the situation we are in. Our first priority is to survive and in order to do so we have to join the mobile infantry and head back to the starships together, which is what we are doing. Based on the movie, this group is the most likely to return alive. We have no reason to continue hiding before we reach safety. And commanding this whole army to fight guarantees our safety."

Zheng sighed. "I know. I know what you mean due to the mistakes we made in the beginning. This army is no match for for the bugs so our plan of following the plot to go back with them without doing anything else only leads to death. Yet if we take actions by ourselves, another round of

hoppers will be able to kill us. God had changed the plot so the only thing we can do is make use of all the potentials of our talents and powers. Always such precise calculations by God. We never get to go through a movie or two at ease even after becoming stronger. A change of plot can threaten us easily. So are we going to face the other team once we head back?”

Xuan smiled slyly. “Not quite. There are benefits to what we are doing. We are the strongest of the three teams after all. When we reveal four of our members, they will hesitate to attack instead. A team has at least seven people. So where are the other three? How strong are they? What are their enhancements and abilities? They have no idea. When we reveal ourselves without fear, they will be hesitant before confirming every member in our team.”

“In the meantime, we can use the achievements in this battle to join the higher ups of the military, which will give us advantage in any following plans. Maybe even find the other team through traces. When we assimilate into the crowd, neither sides can be distinguish players from natives unless someone diverge from the plot. After we head back to space and before the second battle begins, is a battle of wits between us and the other team. The first to find out the other team wins!”

(If it’s a battle of wits, does that mean we won already?)

“To conclude it, the battle of wits begins after they come back from Klendathu. The first to find out the other team wins!”

A huge fleet was traveling in space. This fleet were the rescue ships sent from Earth. In the resting area for officers of one of the larger starships, nine men and women sat on the sofa, chair, floor, or bed. A blonde man said as he took a bite of chocolate. He snapped the chocolate in half. His eyes shining with ferociousness.

The others looked at each other then smiled leisurely. A middle age man slapped on the sofa and said. “Well Neos, doesn’t a battle of wits mean we won? Haha.”

Neos gave a cold smile. He grabbed another chocolate bar from the

desk, tore off the wrapping and took a bite. “Things aren’t so simple. We have only confirmed these four members belong to team China. Where is the other team? Southern Flame should be near South Africa judging by its name. As the weakest team, where is their location? Looking from analysis...”

“The third team might be inside the bugs. If that’s so, then things are getting interesting. In the movie, there’s another battlefield, Planet P. How is the third team going to get from one planet to another? God won’t allow a team to stay out of a team battle. There’s only one possibility, transport bugs. Then my previous conclusion is confirmed.”

“We will be attacked by transport bugs. Time unknown. But the result is definitely a battle to death between the three teams. God still hasn’t given us the real mission. Just surviving? That’s simple by staying on Earth. However, it violates the rule of danger equals rewards. God will likely change the plot to attack us with meteorites if we stayed.”

“Let’s wait. The real mission is going to appear soon, along with the ambush by the bugs!”

“That’s basically it.” Xuan was as calm as always. It seemed as though he didn’t care about anything. “Based on previous conclusions, the bugs have a species that can travel in space, and likely to have powerful attacks. Once the bugs begin their attack, the real mission of this movie will appear!”

Zheng laughed. “Don’t worry. No use thinking so far ahead. Let’s discuss a more practical problem. What do you think we should do after finding them out in the battle of wits? Kill them for points and rewards or exchange information. I think...”

Xuan didn’t say anything for a while. Then he expressed a sense of resignation via the soul link and said. “It is unwise to consider events after victory. Don’t underestimate anyone. Anticipate every possible situation so you will have the mindset for every difficulty. If the other team came up with the plan to obtain a high position in the military at the beginning, they should have decent ability to react.”

Zheng continued laughing and interrupted Xuan. “It’s reasonable to worry about everything else but if it’s a battle of wits, we will definitely win. I never doubt it. But you are right. We will consider the next step after finding them. Every team experiences many different movies. Aside from team China’s special circumstance, they should have gone through many movies before reaching team battles. We might be able to get information about the movies out of them.”

Xuan said in agreement. “Correct. In comparison to the points and rewards from killing them, information about the rules of magic or quest items can be more valuable. The road to the top of the mountain is in view.”

Zheng looked ahead. Far away, a road leading up the mountain was visible in front of him.

# Chapter 9-2

The march until they reached the top of the mountain killed over 800 troopers and 300 more injured. This was the result of Xuan, WangXia and Kampa's cooperation along with Lan's psyche scan. Otherwise, the number of casualties would have doubled.

"This is a great result. The numbers are better than expected. Looks like these troopers gone through rigorous training, although there are issues with their training. They lack actual combat experience. These surviving troopers will become the bone of the federal armed forces. They will be the only army who lived through actual combat since the third world war." Xuan sat on a rock and said to the others around him.

The army went up the mountain. Xuan ordered the troopers to use tactical nukes on the thousands of bugs chasing after them. The tactical nukes had a range of 5km, a weapon that the federation never gave up.

The environment at the top of the mountain wasn't great. The wind on this planet was strong, and its temperature over ten degrees lower than Earth. There were snow accumulated on the top. The sharp wind made them shiver.

Though the federation was quite capable in areas outside the military. The troopers' uniforms contained mini portable air conditioners that could adjust temperature to one comfortable for the human body. This enabled them to continue fighting in freezing conditions.

A type of black rock scattered over the mountain top and in the ground. This type of rock had similar toughness to granite. There was only one road leading up the mountain. The troopers cheered and the officers led them to sit or lie down for rests. They had been fighting for hours already. They heated up simple military ration and water. A delicious scent filled the mountain top. Those guarding by the road turned their heads around to look as they drooled. Though their past training kept them guarding the place. Xuan had told everyone that each rotation was twenty minutes with one and half hour of rests. They just needed to persevere for twenty

minutes and steaming food and water was waiting for them.

“Take a good rest. Our priority is to raise morale. The current result is decent. These people at least have hope. Adequate food and resting will recover 80% of strength for those who aren’t injured. But that’s not enough. We won’t last six hours with this.” Xuan was writing on a piece of paper and explained.

Zheng asked in confusion. “What other problem? The wind is strong here. Those hopper bugs wouldn’t be able to fly up here. There’s only one road and with the black rocks on the ground, this place should be safe.”

Kampa and WangXia smiled bitterly. WangXia replied. “You have learned to grasp the situation through life and death situations so your arrangements are timely and on point in combat involving small groups. However, it isn’t so simple for an army. We don’t have enough ammunition.”

“Ammunition?”

Xuan raised his head. The paper was filled with numbers and formulas. He continued. “Correct. We don’t have much ammunition remaining. The ideal arrangement to guarding the road is with a thousand people. That can push back even the tanker bugs. But that’s not viable. We only have forty two tactical nukes left, 13,000 magazines. Dividing them among the whole army only leaves each person with two to three magazines. So unless there aren’t many bugs or they only come in few waves...”

Zheng also fell in silence. The scan showed that the bugs had surrounded the foot of the mountain and their numbers extended up to tens of kilometers away. That was only the surface. Countless bugs were moving under the ground. The total was well over millions. Aside from tanker bugs, there was a type with thick exoskeleton and two large pincers. Their numbers were less than the tanker bugs and they weren’t among the list God had noted. It seemed like this type of bugs belonged to a hidden level and extremely threatening.

Zheng smiled bitterly. “You’re right. This amount of bugs can drown us in six hours by just charging at us. Fortunately, the visibility here is low.

Otherwise these troopers would lose all their confidence in staying alive.”

Kampa and WangXia sighed. Kampa suddenly said. “Then just bring out our weapons. If I can use the EMP rifle in situation, I can kill all the bugs. Haha. The only problem is if they can block off the bugs while the gun overheats.”

“No!” Zheng and Xuan both yelled. Xuan then said. “Can’t show our weapons. The other team won’t attack us since a few of our members are still hidden to them. However, if our weapons are exposed to other people, the whole federation will become our enemy. Governments are the most ruthless entity in front of interests. This is a war genre movie that takes place in space. The chances of us surviving against the government is zero!”

Kampa sighed. “So we are just going to sit around like this? How is it different than fighting outside by ourselves?”

Xuan took a look at the troopers and gave a cold smile. “Of course there is a difference. There are so many people here dying with us. We will only get into danger after they are all dead. Back to ammunition. We should have enough to last four hours under intense fires with five hundred troopers. The next hour will require other defensive methods. The first thing we can use are the rocks. The incline is steep enough. A rock with a diameter of one to two meters can killed all the bugs on the way down. It is slightly more powerful than bullets. With several thousand people digging and pushing down rocks, we can last about an hour. However, one shortcoming is its effect against larger bugs such as the tanker bugs and the ones with pincers. That’s when we use the forty two tactical nukes.”

Zheng, Kampa, and WangXia was planning their role in the battle as they listened to Xuan. Zheng nodded. “Then I will assign our roles. Kampa teach the troopers how to maximize ammunition efficiency and not fire aimlessly. WangXia go collect all the grenades. See if you can modify them. I need more powerful grenades. Their size isn’t an issue. Xuan stay here and coordinate the army. I will stand by the road entrance and take care of the larger bugs. Zero stay connected with my mind. Use the sniper rifle from this army to snipe the eyes of the larger bugs. Their eyes are

the most fragile. The army's sniper rifles have a rather short range and low power so you are the only one that can take this task."

"Lan coordinate our soul link and keep scanning, especially at the cliffs. They are steep but we should be prepared. Gando you have to protect Lan with your life. She's the most important person in this team, more so than me. If the situation gets dangerous, you have to carry her and run. If need be... Sigh. That's it. Take care of your role and defend. Six more hours left."

## Chapter 9-3

Six hours is too short in a person's life, barely a night of sleep. But to these several thousand people, these six hours determined whether they could continue their lives or not. Passed and they continue to live. Fail and they die. All the troopers became aware of it in under twenty minutes because Xuan altered some tasks for the instructors.

“You have to admit that the instructors are much more valuable than they think. The Chinese army never had a problem with morale. You just assign some people as instructors and tell them how to convince the soldiers. Let them know that fighting with their lives means live, losing to despair means death! I need an army that has no sense of fear.”

Xuan's words were simple. He placed his orders via the communication devices while he talked to Zheng. Zheng almost felt like he was unnecessary. Though he wouldn't be jealous. Xuan would make anyone feel inferior after all. It was like looking up to an omnipotent.

Zheng thought a bit and said. “They still haven't begun their attack. Are they waiting for the brain bug's order?”

Xuan replied without raising his head. “No. The brain bug probably placed the order already. However, due to the width of this road and the environmental conditions not being suitable for hopper bugs, coming up in small waves won't threaten us. The brain bug's order should be one all-out attack. A hundred thousand, two hundred thousand, five hundred thousand, one million. It will keep attacking until we die without regard for casualties. Lan, have you masked the mountain top yet? Expose the entrance to the road. Let the other team see us. Zheng, if our defense falls and our lives are in danger, follow Lan's lead to subdue them with Destruction. That will be the only way for us to live!”

Zheng nodded with a serious expression. Before he got to talk, they heard gunshots coming from the road entrance. Then the troopers' cries. Cries of fear and the desire to live coming from deep within their hearts. Those troopers were fighting for their lives. Bullets rained down the road.

Xuan immediately yelled at the communication device. “Kampa! How did you manage your group? Make them conserve ammunition! You should be aware of how much firepower is needed. If this happens again, you can get out of there!”

Kampa yelled back. “Yes, sir! F\*ck. Don’t make me recall my past. Lots of bugs swarming over. Not going to talk anymore. I know to conserve ammunition but f\*ck. The number of bugs!”

5 hours 42 minutes until the rescue ships arrive, the bugs began their attack. Several hundred thousands of bugs were charging up the mountain road. The terrorizing scene made these troopers shiver. They had forgotten about their orders and fired their guns based on instincts. There was only one thing in their minds, make the bugs disappear.

Tatata! Kampa looked around in a cold expression. The barrel of his gun smoking. Several troopers lay on the ground in a pool of blood. The others looked at him in shock. He yelled with rage. “Aim and shoot as you were taught. Ten people a group. Each group is responsible for one section. Anyone who wastes their ammunition will be subject to military execution!”

The troopers were still in shock until he fired at the sky. These troopers quickly began aiming down the road. The military’s quality wasn’t high but the trooper trainings were rigorous. Every trooper was able to accomplish aimed shooting with decent accuracy in this situation. Kampa let out a sigh of relief. He held a rifle on each of his hands and sprayed down the mountain. Even though he was spraying, his accuracy still surpassed everyone here. But despair slowly crept into him as he watched over the boundless sea of green and yellow.

“So this is a war genre world? An individual’s strength is so insignificant. No one person selected by God is perfect. We need comrades, need to combine various strength, need to cooperate to finish such missions. I will probably die without you three in this world. Haha!” Zheng laughed as he stood by the entrance.

Lan sent the result of the scans to him. In the deep underground 10km

away, an area was masked. It might be the other team, or it might be the brain bug. Zheng had decided that the time the team fell into danger was the time he had to put his life on the line.

“What are those?”

Some troopers shouted. Ten tanker bugs were charging at them. These tanker bugs couldn't move in closer than 500 meters. The federation's guns weren't powerful but their range was quite good. These bullets were designed for longer range.

On the back of the tanker bugs were ten tumors. The tanker bugs from before didn't have these. So everyone focused their attention at the tumors. As soon as these tanker bugs got killed, the tumors shot out from the back.

“Shoot! Shoot those things down! We can't let them get close!” Kampa yelled within the troopers. He sprayed with his rifles but the bullets only set off sparks as they got reflected off the tumors. These tumors crossed several hundred meters and headed to troopers.

“Down!” WangXia's voice came from behind. People turned their heads back subconsciously and saw him fired a tactical nuke from his shoulder. The troopers yelled. “F\*ck! The nuke has a one-minute timer after impact. Are you trying to kill us all?”

Just then, a brilliant light sparked in the sky. These people screamed with their hands covering their eyes. Those who got down on the ground were luckier. They only suffered some shockwave and heatwave.

People looked up to see the fireball still burning in the sky. WangXia put down the launcher and said. “I modified the timer to three seconds. Be careful.”

Two tumors were further away from the explosion. They rolled off the fireball and onto the ground. The troopers around them instantly ran away. The tumors didn't explode but rather stretched out into spider like bugs. These spider bugs jumped into the troopers and shredded them to pieces. Their speed and strength were much higher than regular bugs. Dozens of troopers died in a few seconds. Yet, the others couldn't open

fire since they were inside the crowd.

Zheng yelled. “Kampa, organize men to continue shooting! WangXia, use up some modified grenades until new troopers take their place! Xuan, send a hundred troopers over! Zero, shoot, shoot them down!” He charged over and leaped at one of the spider bugs.

(Can’t use any strength on my right arm and I am not left handed.)

Zheng was thinking how to fight as he entered the unlocked mode. He was only a few meters away when the spider bug noticed him. It raised one of its sharp legs. Zheng leaped right into it with his stomach. The leg pierced through him. But he had already calculated his positioning to have the leg go in between his organs. It seemed terrifying but his organs were intact.

“Ah!” Zheng closed in through the leg and stabbed the army knife and his whole arm into the spider bug’s eye. He activated Red Flame on his left hand since no one would see through the bug. The bug’s brain was burned with just one attack. Its body struggled for a moment then got shredded by Zheng.

Zheng breathed heavily as he turned his head around. The other spider bug had killed so many troopers during this time. Broken limbs, organs, and blood filled the ground.

# Chapter 10-1

Zheng took several deep breaths. The yellings, the fears on the troopers running away, and those attacking under Kampa's commands were in slow motion during unlocked mode. He was like the audience watching through a screen. Every movement was vividly printed in his head. The brutal scene activated his qi again.

He looked at the bended knife on his hand. The knife wouldn't have been able to stab through the eyelid of the bug. That was the result of him forcing it in. That stab bended the tip of the knife. The technology used wasn't anything high tech. Its toughness was less than titanium. He threw the knife on the ground then pulled the leg out from his stomach. Blood spurted out. He stepped a foot on the dead bug and gave a hard pull with his left hand. The qi in addition to his abnormal strength made him snapped a leg off the joint of the bug. It was spear like, about one meter long, and with unbelievable toughness. He swung the leg a few times then charged at the other jungle spider.

That bug's vision had been focusing on him for a while. As soon as it saw Zheng snapped off the leg, it abandoned the troopers around and leaped at Zheng.

Multiple thoughts flashed through Zheng's mind in this instant. Yet, before he could do anything, several bullets hit the tip of the jungle spider's front leg. The bullets weren't powerful but they broke the spider bug's balance and made it rolled forward. Rolling towards Zheng. He stabbed the leg forward without a second thought. The leg pierced the bug's head. A few twitches later, its body stopped moving.

Zheng pulled out the leg and panted. A dozen troopers ran toward him as they cheered. The cheers were seemingly crazy at this point. The female troopers hurriedly bandaged the wound on his stomach. WangXia walked over and asked. "You alright?"

"Not an issue. Big rewards. 100 points each. And you? Did the kills from the tactical nuke reward you points?" Zheng recalled the notification and

replied.

WangXia paused for a moment then gave a bitter smile. “No points. It seems like the tactical nuke won’t give you points. Maybe that’s due to the nuke being their weapon.”

Zheng looked around at the troopers staring at him with admiration, especially from the female troopers tending his wound. He sighed and said. “Everyone back to your assigned position. The first group continue shooting. Second group get ready! Coordinate to swap in groups of a hundred. Third group begin clean up of dead bodies and delivery of ammunition!”

The troopers scattered back to their position following his shout. Other troopers on this mountain top were resting on the ground. They knew this was the time to fight for their lives. They couldn’t afford to waste any energy. And maybe this was the final rest of their lives.

The second group gradually swapped places with the first group. These three hundred troopers dropped to the ground completely exhausted as soon as they were off the defense line. People had to carry them back to the bonfires. Water, ration, and over ten minutes of resting before they came back to their senses. Then they just sat there quietly.

Physical exhaustion was intense but so was the mental pressure. That boundless sea of bugs was seemingly just a moment away from breaking through their defense. They were fortunate to be in a strategic location.

“Zheng, be careful. Another of those new tanker bugs is coming up. It wasn’t moving fast but the others bugs are hiding behind it.”

Lan’s voice was transferred to his mind along with an image. He saw an eight meter tall black bug crawling toward them step by step.

“WangXia, how are the modified grenades?” Zheng quickly turned to WangXia. He brought out several grenades that looked normal.

WangXia said. “The dynamite in this world is high tech. Inside the grenades is a thumb size unknown white crystal stabilized by black liquids. I don’t know of its power so I took out the crystals from ten

grenades and put them into a single shell. However, that means the amount of stabilizer is reduced. I am uncertain of its effect. It maybe dangerous. You have to decide whether to use these grenades.”

Zheng nodded. He took the grenades then put them into the ring. The lack of stabilizer might mean any intense movement could trigger them. The Na ring was safer in this respect. He looked ahead and muttered. “WangXia, remember to use the tactical nukes when that tanker bug gets close. We still have forty one, don’t let them go to waste. Or else we might not even make it to three hours.”

Dozens of blaster bugs began moving up the road as they spoke. On the back of several of them were tumors. Now that the troopers knew what these tumors were, their fire was focused on these blaster bugs. Those bugs were killed at the 500m mark. The tumors only shot forward 400m before landing. As soon as the jungle spiders stretched out, hundreds of guns focused on them and killed these jungle spiders.

However, there was always a cost to any action. Several blaster bugs broke through the 100m mark when the troopers were focused on the jungle spiders. Rays of fire shot out. They could feel the heat despite the distance.

Kampa shouted. “Don’t panic! They are still far away. Continue shooting! Do not back off one step even at the cost of your life! Otherwise you will be subjected to military punishment!” He stood in front of everyone and began shooting with his two rifles. It increased the troopers’ courage. Everyone was yelling and shouting at this point. Some Caucasian tore off their uniform and jumped out just like Kampa.

The blaster bugs weren’t invincible. Gunfire finally broke through their exoskeleton when they reached the 50m mark. They didn’t get to shoot fire again as their bodies got torn by the bullets.

Everyone synchronized a sigh of relief. The blaster bugs charged ahead so that the next wave of bugs were still some distance away. A hundred troopers immediately dropped to the ground to catch their breaths at this opportunity. Xuan noticed it and ordered the next group to swap in.

“Zheng, the tanker bug is coming! They masked the tanker bug.  
Something is not right!”

# Chapter 10-2

Zheng connected to the scan. He saw the masked area approaching with a pack of bugs following closely behind. These bugs were planning to use the tanker bug as a shield to block the bullets. But why was there a need to mask the location?

“Simple. The most probable cause is the tanker bug has a flaw that will be exposed upon being attacked or moving differently. The second probability is the tanker bug is a kamikaze but no one would have their own troops following that.” Xuan said calmly.

Zheng nodded and said. “Xuan, send two groups of troopers over. If we suffer from big casualties, have these troopers enter the battle immediately. WangXia, use the tactical nukes as soon as you can see the tanker bug. Ignore the other bugs for now. The probability is low but we can't let it come close in case it is actually a kamikaze bug.”

WangXia looked through the infrared binocular. On the foot of the mountain was a shadowy figure moving toward them slowly. Countless bugs followed closely behind. The amount of bugs would put even Zheng in danger unless he runs away with the Sky Stick.

WangXia readied the tactical nuke on his shoulder. His eyes fixed down at the road. He could see about 2km in distance after the enhancement from dragon blood. However, this range was not the best to fire the tactical nuke. The tanker bug entered his vision. His shoulder adjusted for a bit then he quieted down. The years of training in the special forces gave him a calming mentality. As the tanker bug moved in another 500 meters, he took a deep breath then pulled the trigger.

The tactical nuke lopped down right at the front of the tanker bug, in between its pincers. A brilliant flash of light followed by a loud thump and mushroom cloud. A ball of fire enclosed several hundred meters in diameter.

The troopers on the battlefield cheered. Every little victory was a step toward staying alive in the current situation. Every victory was a raise in

morale. Of course, that was under the assumption that it was actually a victory.

The ball of fire was dying down and exposed a blue field in the center. The field covered a large area. It moved out from the remaining fire. Everyone was shocked to see the tanker bug intact. Its exoskeleton flipped open, releasing a blue gas that formed the field. This was obviously a barrier that blocked the tactical nuke.

The tanker bug continued moving forward. Its exoskeleton closed and the blue barrier disappeared. A lot of the bugs behind it were killed by the tactical nuke, but many more simply came up to take their place.

“F\*ck. Is this even a bug anymore? Do bugs have barriers?” Zheng murmured. He could only watch as the tanker bug moving closer and closer. 1400 meters, 1300 meters. The timer on their remaining lives were ticking with each step. The troopers were fighting out of their minds that they had forgotten any orders. Everyone fired at the bug without conservation. Yet, bullets only caused sparks on its exoskeleton. It didn’t even need to use the barrier.

Zheng was still in his unlocked mode. Multiple tactics came to his mind, the best being using his Tiger’s Soul but that was just what he couldn’t do. The second tactic was multiple tactical nukes at once. All barriers had a limit. But that would consume their tactical nukes too fast.

(Its exoskeleton can block bullets so it must be extremely tough. The barrier can block off any explosions.)

Zheng took out the bandages from his ring then said to WangXia. “Fire the tactical nuke at my signal. It can’t be early nor late. I am just testing but there should be a high chance of success.”

He picked up the jungle spider leg from the ground and attached a grenade to it. This reminded him of Alien where he attached grenades to a steel bar. After so long, he used this method once again.

Once all was set, Zheng took a deep breath and stood up. The tanker bug was at the 1000-meter mark by now. The troopers were still shooting nonstop.

Zheng aimed the leg at the tanker bug. Then he pulled the ring on the grenade and threw it out. Half a second later, he yelled. "Fire!"

WangXia had already aimed at the tanker bug. He pulled the trigger the instant he heard the yell. The tactical nuke followed closely behind the jungle spider leg. As the tactical nuke came to 10 meters away from the bug, it opened up the exoskeleton. The blue barrier blocked the tactical nuke but that jungle spider leg was already inside the barrier at this point.

That was all Zheng could see. The brilliant flash made him closed his eyes. He felt like he was blinded since he was focusing so intensely at the tanker bug. His eyes were painful and he couldn't see anything. Fortunately, the psyche scan sent him the image of the area. The tanker bug inside the ball of fire was blown to pieces. The other team had turned off the mask.

WangXia saw tears coming from Zheng's eyes and immediately opened his eyelids. "Good, not a big issue. The army doctor has eye drops for intense flashes. Don't open your eyes for ten minutes afterward. Your body is much more resilient than normal people so this isn't a big problem."

Zheng nodded and patted WangXia's shoulder. "Got that tanker bug. Freaking 1000 points and a rank D reward. We can farm to our hearts content if they send in a few more. Haha."

WangXia smiled bitterly. "There isn't time to make more of those grenades and not enough regular grenades. We also might not coordinate so well next time. Failure means death so we are better off not taking the risk."

"Haha, risk equals rewards. Anyway, we made it through this wave."

Zheng walked back to the camps. The troopers finally cheered when they didn't see the barrier coming out of the fire. Some even threw the helmets up. Kampa stood their breathing deeply. The moving fortress almost collapsed this army mentally.

"If we are going to die, it won't be today! Because we are giving all we

have! We won't die here! The front line back off. Second group take their place. Continue shooting!"

Zheng faced toward the road with his eyes closed. The death of the tanker bug also broke free of the limitation put on the bugs' speed. Countless bugs charged up the mountain. The second group fired their rifles at Zheng's command.

# Chapter 11-1

Three hours had gone by. The death toll reached 1300 people, only a few dozens were injured. Most of the deaths were caused by the jungle spiders. The first dozen wave or so of jungle spiders were taken care of by tactical nukes. However, as they were coming more and more frequently, the army had to stop firing tactical nukes. The last twenty nukes were saved for the most critical moments.

The jungle spiders curled up to a ball when they were shot into the air. Their exoskeleton was extremely tough and protected them from fire. All the bullets could do was get reflected off with sparks. After a few times of heavy casualties and with the help of Zheng, the troopers grasped the ways to deal with the jungle spiders.

The best option was to kill the blaster bugs at range. 500 meters was the line where these jungle spiders became not a threat. If too many blaster bugs came at once, the troopers would retreat. They needed to get at least 30 meters away from where the jungle spiders land. Their rifles could shred the spiders once they stretched out.

This tactic cost 1300 people. A thick layer of flesh, blood, and broken limbs covered the ground. But the troopers were only following orders mechanically at this point. Their bodies and minds were numb.

“Count of ammunition? How much do we have left?” Zheng sat on a rock a little tired. He just killed another tanker bug with the help of WangXia. Several hours of combat put a strain to both his body and mind. He expends over ten times the energy a normal person needs after all.

“2000 magazines, 11 tactical nukes, and 400 grenades. One and half hour before the rescue ships arrive.” Xuan said calmly.

Zheng sighed. He looked down to the foot of the mountain. Bodies of dead bugs piled up by the road. Every wave of bugs would destroy most of these bodies by a spray of fire by the blaster bug or a step by the tanker bugs. There was a period of pause after the previous tanker bug attack.

The troopers used this opportunity to transport ammunition and swap the frontline. Everyone let out a sigh of relief for the short break. Zheng took out a pack of cigarette. He lit it with his shaky hand, sat on the front most rock and looked down.

“Don’t worry. We will survive. We have to survive. We bear a lot of things from our past and have many things to take care of. We will live on even if that means fighting with our lives!”

He took a puff and said through the soul link. His left hand holding a cigarette butt taken out from the ring. He stared at it for a moment then put it back. Zheng stood up from the rock and said. “Troopers, prepare to fight! Let these bugs know that humans are not herbivores. Let these bugs remember our bravery on this mountain!”

The troopers gave him a shout in reply. Humanity in this world was different from theirs. The federation’s priorities caused military quality to decline but society also became peaceful. The contact with aliens revealed the heat within their blood. Humans were once a brutal and offensive race on par with the bugs!

Zheng looked at the swarms of bugs and knew the final attack began. The bugs had no sense of fear and their numbers were uncountable. However, the death toll in this battle had enraged the brain bug.

“Zheng, the masked area is moving up toward the ground. Is the second team finally joining the battle?”

Zheng said coldly. “Then let them come. If they don’t appear now, our rescue ships will come soon. They probably think we are weak. But what qualification do they have when we aren’t using our own weapons nor full strength? Xuan, think of a defense tactic to keep ammunition in balance.”

Xuan’s mind also felt a little irritated. He murmured. “I noticed the bugs’ movement very early. The pause after the previous attack was too long. The scan shows hoppers joining the attack. However, the environment isn’t suitable for hoppers. Are they going to attack without regard for casualties? The best result for them is one out of every one hundred hoppers can get up to the mountain top. Go defend by the

entrance. I will arrange the rest.”

Zheng nodded. “Understood. Everyone let’s try our best to live!”

Following the first gunshot, the troopers began shooting. Bugs on the frontline fell in rows but there were so many more charging up. A lot of bugs died by being stamped on. The army’s firepower looked too weak in comparison. These bugs pushed their way up at the expense of countless dead bodies. The gap was closing in meter by meter, as was the weight on the troopers’ hearts.

Several minutes later, the second group entered combat. The thousand trooper frontline finally suppressed the bugs’ advance. That was when the blaster bugs started to appear.

The blaster bugs would kill a few warrior bugs with every step, yet the warrior bugs blocked in front of them to take the firepower. The gap was closing. 400 meters, 300 meters. The blaster bugs shot the tumors at the frontline. No one backed off. Tens of thousands of bugs were more threatening than several dozen jungle spiders at this point. As death approached them from the top, the troopers stood in place and continued firing.

Zheng yelled. “WangXia, use tactical nukes. One at the sky and one at the ground. Push their frontline back!”

Zheng charged up with a jungle spider leg he just snapped off. This was the only weapon better than the army knife he could use at the moment.

WangXia fired the tactical nuke at the sky. Just then, Zheng heard Lan’s voice. “The cliffs are filled with hopper bugs! Thousands of them are climbing up the cliffs. If the wind blows them off, they would fly back and keep climbing!”

# Chapter 11-2

A weight dropped on Zheng's heart. He took a deep breath and said hastily. "Zero, lead a group to patrol all sides. Shoot down any hoppers you see. The wind here is strong. They are weaker than regular bugs when they can't fly. Kill as much as you can. Xuan, arrange troopers to guard the borders. Gando! Protect Lan. Go with her to the center of the army. That's it for now. We can't stop the hoppers completely for now so we can only take things as they come. Let them come up and shoot them down one by one."

One hour left. Three groups of troopers began finding and carrying rocks under Xuan's orders. A lot of ammunition were expended by now. Part of the remaining ammunition were given to those patrolling the border. So there were only a thousand magazines left. Yet the bugs' attack was as fierce as before. Countless warrior bugs climbed the road in waves. The addition of blaster bugs, jungle spiders, and the occasional tanker bug nearly broke through their front at times. They spent several nukes and almost all the grenades to keep their defense in place.

So many bugs died that even when the blaster bugs incinerated a majority of them and the rest stamped by the sea of bugs, a layer of bug paste still elevated the road. Starting from the 500 meter mark where most bugs died, there was a 20 meter high hill followed by a sudden drop. This increased the distance the bugs had to climb. The hill was also beneficial to their aiming but not so much to the rocks. The hill would stop the rocks at the 500 meter mark.

Zheng observed the area and thought for a moment. "WangXia, save five nukes. And don't nuke that hill before we completely depleted our ammunition. That's it for now. F\*cking we can't use the plasma grenades and mines. Those are as powerful as the nukes. The EMP rifle can also easily take care of the bugs. Even my Tiger's Soul..."

WangXia smiled bitterly. The plasma bombs were way more powerful than these grenades. One that could take in 50% of Zheng's Qi would had power equivalent to the tactical nukes. The most important thing was a

nuke's power was concentrated in the center and becomes weaker as you get further away. The effective area was only fifty meters in radius. However, the plasma bombs could vaporize everything where the plasma balls go.

Time continued ticking and so was their ammunition. Troopers who were aware of it felt the knives hanging over their heads. At the same time, the hoppers finally showed their face after climbing for so long. They attempted to lift off but the strong wind would blow them off at three meters above the ground. These hoppers could only fly close to the ground got shot down by the patrolling troopers. Yet, their number was in the thousands. More and more began showing up after the first one.

“Time? And the rescue ships? Xuan! Only 200 magazines left! How much longer!”

Zheng was almost shouting at this point. He observed the scan and saw a few more tanker bugs coming up. They were slow but their size and ability were decisive factors. If any one of them came close, that also meant the fall of their defense!

“No use talking about time now. We just contacted the rescuing starships. They said dozens of ships had been sent down, enough to take in tens of thousands of people. Such fools. If there really are tens of thousands for them to save, there wouldn't be a need to ask for help. Laughable mortal's wisdom. This is basically the situation. The rescue ships will enter the atmosphere in thirty minutes. Which means we will be able to board the ships in thirty to forty five minutes. This is a conservative estimate.” Xuan's voice didn't come through soul link but rather from behind.

Zheng turned around to see Xuan standing there with the gauss pistols and a satirical smile.

Zheng gave him a surprise look and asked. “What are you here for? Is it fine to use our weapons?”

Another pistol slipped out into his hand. “The gauss pistols have a similar look to the army's pistols. You have be in close range to

distinguish the two. Plans, schemes and raising morale are useless at this point. The only thing we can do is continue fighting as before or get swarmed by the sea of bugs. I don't particularly like this kind of combat but there are no other good choice."

Zheng laughed and patted him on the shoulder. "That mortal's wisdom again. Anyway, since you can use the gauss pistols, kill a few more bugs. But don't use your gun kata too early. That state can't last too long."

Suddenly, dozens of jungle spiders were flying over. A tactical nuke was fired before most of the troopers could react. A brilliant light flashed over the battlefield. Then three balls landed on the ground and instantly stretched out into the jungle spiders. Zheng and Xuan looked at each other then charged at the spiders. With one person in close combat and one shooting from range, the jungle spiders were eliminated before they could cause a disaster. Even so, ten troopers were killed during the time.

WangXia's voice transmitted over. "Only five nukes left. A few more waves of spiders and we won't have any more nukes to attack."

Zheng looked over the troopers and said. "Don't use any more nukes. Let the spiders land. Xuan, send the remaining groups over. We need to start throwing rocks and replace any troopers that get killed by the spiders."

Xuan nodded and went to the back of the army. "Remember what I said before? When we fall into desperation, go attack the other team. Kill them, capture, or injure them. The bugs might hesitate if we have hostages in hand. The chance is lower than 30% but it is still better than waiting to die."

Zheng smiled bitterly as he looked out the battlefield. The sea of bugs was never ending. The hill was piling up higher and it pushed forward another 100 meters. There were only 400 meters in between them and the bugs. Plus a hundred magazines left.

Zheng ordered the troopers to stop using ammunition. They leave fifty to themselves then gave the rest to the patrolling troopers. The troopers then lined up to transfer rocks and push them down. Zheng had WangXia use two nukes on the hill to blast down the hill of dead bugs.

The large rocks rolled down the incline. They reached an unstoppable speed after a hundred meters. The first wave of bugs were smashed to pieces by these rocks. Even the blaster bugs were knocked over. The bugs were pushed back to the 700 meter mark for a while.

# Chapter 11-3

“Stay strong! Only twenty minutes left!” Zheng shouted to the troopers.

He kicked a large rock that was four meters tall in front. The rock rolled down the incline like a road roller due to its size, crushing everything on its path.

People’s eyes followed the rock at this point. They hadn’t realized that Zheng kicked that rock down during this urgent moment. A normal person wouldn’t have such strength nor the bones to withstand the impact.

There was nothing that could stop the rock until it hit the tanker bug’s barrier. Its path was painted in green paste and blood from the bugs.

Zheng took a deep breath and shouted. “Continue throwing rocks. Even if we can’t kill them, we have to delay them! The rescue ships will be here in just over ten minutes. Won’t you feel it’s unfair if we die now?”

Yet, the troopers didn’t have bodies as strong as his. Twenty hours of continuous combat had exhausted them. And now they had to transport and throw rocks. These rocks were tough and heavy. A one-meter-tall rock would take three troopers to move. Their speed slowed down and the bugs slowly grouped back up. They moved up the incline meter by meter just like ocean waves. The numbers were mind numbing.

Zheng felt his heart getting colder by the second. He had stood in the frontline the whole time. The tanker bug began moving again. The rocks were effective against normal bugs but not tanker bug. He was getting more anxious with each step the tanker bug took.

Just then, Kampa and a trooper lifted up a rock but Kampa lost his strength and the rock fell on his leg. He cried in pain. Zheng immediately ran over and flipped the rock away. “How are you doing? Kampa, you still alright?”

Sweat covered the Russian man’s head. He said with a bitter smile. “I can’t continue anymore. I have no strength and my shin bone is broken. I

am sorry to drag you down at this crucial moment...”

Zheng had long been aware that Kampa couldn't keep going. He didn't have the extra stats, didn't have qi nor blood energy. The dragon blood only increased his body to two or three times that of a normal person. But he fought for almost seven hours here, giving orders while fighting on the frontline.

Zheng patted his shoulder. “No need to say these things, bro. We promised to stay alive together. Let me take care of the rest. You two over there, carry him to the center. Kampa, we will live!”

Zheng handed him a pack of cigarette. “Go take a smoke to suppress the pain.” Then he walked back to the frontline.

Even though he said those words, but could he really live on?

Zheng looked at the sea of bugs underneath and the troopers panting heavily on the sides. A weight was dropped on his heart. For several times already, he wanted to take out the Sky Stick and Tiger's Soul and head straight to where the other team was then capture the brain bug.

“Are the rescue ships... not going to make it?”

He raised his head to look at the sky, then back to the mountain road. Since the troopers' slowed down, the bugs moved in further. They slowly came back to the five-hundred-meter mark.

“Out of ammunition, Zheng. We killed thousands of hoppers but there are no bullets to take care of the remaining two hundred. I ordered a thousand people to head to the cliff and fight in close combat.” Xuan's voice sounded in his mind.

Zheng was feeling numb as bad news came one after another. The tanker bug had moved past the two-hundred-meter mark, and the rest of the bugs followed behind them. His left hand was shaking. He could barely suppress the desire to bring out his weapon. The long hours of stress made him want to shred the bugs to pieces with destruction.

A loud boom came from above. Everyone raised their heads in reaction. Tens of large ships came through the clouds. These ships scattered and

ten of them came toward this mountain top. The troopers were dazed for a few seconds before they cried with joy. The ships were like stimuli. The troopers moved and threw faster. The rocks couldn't damage the tanker bug but they could delay the bugs. There was only one thing in their minds, delay until the rescue ships land!

Zheng let out a sigh of relief when he saw the rescue ships. Each one was large enough to fit in a thousand people. Which meant that they were safe as soon as they could get off the ground.

Xuan suddenly said through the mind with a cold tone. "Zheng! Hand out fifty magazines to fifty troopers. Have them come to the landing area! Hurry, these magazines are reserved for this moment. Everyone wants to enter the rescue ships in this danger but we can't afford any riot!"

Zheng immediately sent fifty people over with the magazines. After the first ship landed, the rest of the troopers slowed down again. They turned their heads around. The tanker bug was at the sixty-meter mark.

"Don't stop! Continue throwing! WangXia, fire a tactical nuke behind the tanker bug! Don't back away. We will all die if you back!" Zheng yelled among the group then kicked a rock down.

WangXia fired a tactical nuke at behind the tanker bug. The barriers protected the bugs within fifty meters of it but the rest of the bugs were two hundred meters away now. The remaining fire on the ground also prevented the bugs from moving in for a while.

Despite what Zheng said, several troopers ran to the back. The second and third rescue ships had landed. People couldn't stop their desire to escape in this situation.

More troopers soon followed. Zheng charged up with rage using the movement technique. He kicked the first ones that ran to the ground and stabbed one through the chest with the spider leg. "Anyone that runs are subjected to military execution!"

About forty troopers ran. They looked at each other then about a dozen charged at Zheng. To these people, he had no guns in hand, one of his arm broke, and his body was full of wounds. Yet, each person that came

close to him got his head smashed by a kick. When they finally stopped in fear, there was over ten bodies on the ground.

“I said anyone who runs away die! Who the f\*ck still wants to die?”

Zheng was raging inside. He stepped on a trooper that hadn't died off and was groaning in pain then grabbed his head and pulled him apart. Blood splashed over his body. The rest of these troopers immediately ran back to the frontline and began throwing rocks. The fourth rescue ship landed.

# Chapter 12-1

Zheng was connected to Lan's scan the whole time monitoring the bugs' movement, the hoppers, the other team's location, and the rescue ships. The boarding finally came to order after Xuan ordered to kill almost a hundred people. Everyone walked calmly. There were a hundred troopers that came with each ship. They had never been in any actual combat so they were totally shocked when they saw the bloody suppression by Xuan's group. The new troopers soon began following Xuan's orders and helped defend against the cliffs.

The hoppers showing up were much more dangerous than the frontline. Humans needed more than ten times the numbers to fight the bugs in close combat. Many troopers fell back in defeat. They weren't in the bronze age anymore. Combat without firearms was near impossible. Furthermore, Zero was the leader of the group. He wasn't as familiar with military tactics. Once the troopers backed off, about a hundred hoppers climbed onto the top.

The lieutenants stood up in this dangerous situation and led small groups in the attack. They still followed Xuan's orders though since they knew the difference between Zheng's team and them in arranging the defenses and executing the orders. Military ranks were pointless at this point. Those with power should take the responsibilities.

With more and more hoppers coming from the cliffs, the bugs also broke through the frontline. The tanker bug waved its claws and Zheng yelled. "Retreat! Everyone retreat to the rescue ships in the center!"

The troopers felt as though they were pardoned and started running back. Zheng said to WangXia. "Fire the last two tactical nukes at the bugs behind the tanker bug. We have to stop the bugs from getting close with large numbers!"

WangXia nodded and triggered the launcher on his shoulder. After a brilliant flash of light, he dropped the launcher then picked up the other one on the ground. The bugs hiding right behind the tanker bug charged

at him at the same time. They were only fifty meters apart. The tanker bug moved slow but the rest of the bugs not so much. A dozen bugs reached WangXia in the blink of an eye. However, another person also stood in front of him.

Zheng shouted. "Hurry up and fire the nuke! I can't hold them off for long!"

Being a determined soldier in the special forces, WangXia relaxed his body as soon as he heard these words. He focused his attention on the nuke launcher then pulled the trigger. This last nuke flew over the burning fire. WangXia threw away the launcher and yelled. "Run! Zheng! Run!"

Zheng stabbed a spider leg into a bug's mouth then pulled his arm out before the bug could bite him. He dodged another attack, jumped up and kicked at this bug's head. His kick was powerful enough to smash through the exoskeleton. Thick green liquid splashed from its head.

Zheng heard WangXia's voice but he didn't have the time to escape from these dozen bugs. He shouted back. "You run first, you will die if you get into close combat. Believe in me... This is an order!"

WangXia hesitated for only a moment then ran toward the ships. The first rescue ship had lifted off. Many troopers were cheering. Zheng was the only one still fighting these bugs while he moved toward the ships. The bugs weren't easy preys as they tore off pieces of flesh from his body on the way.

Tatata!

Two bugs behind Zheng got knocked to the ground with these shots. Zheng turned his head around in panic to see that these bugs were killed by shots through the eyes. Zero was aiming with a normal federation weapon by a rescue ship. He said to Zheng through soul link. "Keep running! Don't stop. I will take care of the bugs for you!"

Zheng took a deep breath and stopped dodging the attacks. He ran toward the ship next to Zero with the movement technique, leaving his back open to the bugs. The sound of wind coming from behind indicated

the claws approaching him, yet he didn't turn around or dodge. He had completely entrusted his safety to Zero.

Zero didn't disappoint his trust. A bullet penetrated the bug's eye before the claws reached Zheng. Zheng pulled the gap between him and the bugs to five meters with these two seconds of sprinting. His speed was higher to begin with. The buffer allowed him to escape from the zone of danger. The troopers next to Zero then focused fire at the bugs behind him and shot them down.

Zheng quickly ran over to Zero and asked. "Where is everyone? Why haven't you boarded? Lan, label everyone's location!"

Lan was paying attention at Zheng's safety. She sent the location of the team members to Zheng as soon as she heard the words. Kampa already boarded the ship. Lan and Gando were standing in a line not far from Zheng. They should board the second ship in about a minute at this rate. This was following Xuan's plan to stay low key so the other team couldn't find them.

Zheng let out a sigh of relief as he saw the two boarded the ship. Then he turned to where Xuan was standing. Xuan and WangXia were already on the third ship giving orders to the troopers. Zero and him were the last ones. Zero handed the rifle to one of the rescue troopers then stepped into the line for the second ship.

The tanker bug was still several hundred meters away and its movement speed was slow. The bugs near the bottom of the mountain were fast but the nukes broke off the road coming up temporarily. They only had to wait for the ships to take off then they could go back into space in safety.

A trooper ran over to Zheng and saluted. "Sir, Lt. Razak wants you to board the second rescue ship immediately. You are in urgent need of treatments."

Zheng finally took a look over the wounds on his body. Solidified blood nearly painted him in red. Any normal person would have died at this point. He gave himself a mocking smile then turned around and headed toward the rescue ship. This was perhaps the privilege of a sergeant. He

walked past the line and boarded from the side. None of the troopers said anything because they recognized this sergeant with a broken arm. The person that saved the army from despair.

The inside of the ship was spacious. It wouldn't be able to accommodate a thousand people otherwise. There were four floors. The officers were in the third floor. Zheng followed the trooper into an elevator. The ship began trembling as the elevator stopped at the third floor. The trooper said. "It's finally taking off."

Zheng walked over to the window. This ship was taking off. Through the psyche scan, he could see all seven team members were in the ships. One person in the first ship, four in the second, and two in the third. The weight on his heart was finally taken off. As he was about to turn away, he noticed the tanker bug had moved very close to the fourth ship. Its exoskeleton opened up while the ship was preparing to take off. The blue barrier enclosed a fourth of the ship.

# Chapter 12-2

“What is that?” Zheng and Xuan both murmured to themselves.

They focused their attention to the fourth rescue ship. The blue barrier enclosed a quarter of the ship for half a second then the ship fell to the ground in a loud thump. The section enclosed in the barrier was cut off from the rest of the ship. The barrier had such an ability aside from defense. This ship couldn't fly anymore. People in the other rescue ships saw through the windows that numerous bugs swarmed into the mountain top as they flew higher and higher. The ship on the ground soon disappeared in this sea of bugs.

Zheng's heart beat rapidly as he watched. It was lucky that everyone in the team boarded the first three ships. Otherwise, there wasn't even any chance to save anyone with this distance. He felt relieved and sighed. Just then, darkness covered his eyes as he collapsed.

Time passed by. Zheng quietly opened his eyes. First thing that came in his view was water. He also felt a slight pain in the eyes as he opened them. Several blinks later, he became accustomed to this environment. He was actually submerged in a liquid. Two tubes were connected to his nose. A pain came from his right arm. He looked over to see a strange device repairing his right arm.

He recognized this scene from the movie. When the main character's leg got punctured, he also received treatment in the same containers. He had to admit that although the military was garbage, their civilian technology was mature. This was on the level of high tier sci-fi worlds.

The container beeped soon after he opened his eyes. Two nurses ran over. They observed the data on the container and gave him a friendly smile before leaving.

Xuan's voice came in his mind before he took any action. “Don't do anything. Listen to me. We are still in the rescue ships. It will take another twenty minutes to reach the starship fleet. Lan had confirmed that there are no psyche force users in these three ships. However, we

don't know if there are psyche force users in the fleet. If there are, soul link and psyche scan might expose us. So we can't use any psyche force abilities upon arriving at the fleet."

"Secondly, four people in our team have been revealed. You, me, Kampa, and WangXia. Maybe also Zero. Gando and Lan haven't been exposed yet. Gando is special in that he's weak without the robot. Lan has no combat ability on her own. The other team doesn't know this. The two hidden members are the only guarantee we have to avoid getting attacked or treated unfairly. We have to maintain this guarantee."

"Thirdly, we have no information on the other team despite revealing four members already. This is our disadvantage but being the strongest team acknowledge by God is our 'influence'. No matter how they think of this ranking, they will subconsciously avoid going against us face to face. This is our advantage. Thus, we can act without fear as long as we don't get the federation involved, such as using weapons beyond this world's technology. We can openly search for them without fear while they must hide themselves."

"These are the three points in this battle of wits. The rest depends on how we react. We need to find another way to communicate due to the lack of soul link. A way that only we know. Lan, send the information in my mind to everyone's. You have to memorize them. We have twenty minutes, memorize as much as you can. The following words are the most important."

At the same time, in an officer room within the fleet. A blonde hair young man muttered as he took a bite off a chocolate bar. "A direct battle is our disadvantage. I don't care about what you think but don't fight team China face to face, especially before we expose ourselves. Don't try to win them with force because that can likely put us in a dangerous situation. We need to rely on our advantage. It will be best if we can wipe them out. The other team isn't worth worrying, that weakest team."

A blonde hair girl said timidly. "But why can't we get along with team China peacefully? They are the strongest team so they will know a lot of secrets about the movie worlds that we don't. Can we use our 'influence'

to exchange for their information? Then we will cooperate to wipe out team South America.”

The young man snapped the chocolate bar then licked his fingers. “Don’t be naïve. Do you think the strongest team is a merciful weakling? Remember. Only the weak are merciful because they don’t have to powerful to be evil. They can’t become the strong. Who are we going to send in for contact if we want to exchange information? How will we get in contact? Can you be certain that team China won’t kill that person? We can’t engage them directly but they don’t have such worry. They can beat us at any place as soon as they find the chance. What can we do without obtaining their numbers and information?”

A middle age bulky man breathed out. “I don’t get it, Neos. Why don’t we take care of these four people first? Team China will be weaker than us at that point.”

Neos smiled coldly. “Are you an idiot? We don’t know how many people they have nor the powers of those still hidden. Killing these four people will leave traces. An officer’s commands will get recorded in the military. What if their remaining members are still stronger than us? They will be in the shadows at that point while we, as the weaker party, are exposed. Get it? We won’t be far from getting wiped.”

The middle age man wasn’t angry. He smiled and said. “So what do you think we should do?”

Neos brought out a piece of chocolate from his pocket. “Do as we planned and use our advantage to find those still hiding. Once we find all the members of team China, it will be time to draw in our net. Haha. Kill every one of them!”

Zheng didn’t know what was happening in the other team. He was still discussing with Xuan. Xuan said calmly. “Aside from searching for them from the traces, the other key point is developing influence. Since we don’t have as much influence, we will have to raise it! Understand? Hero.”

“Hero?” Zheng asked.

“Correct. Hero!”

Xuan said with certainty. “What is the most difficult problem for commanders in a drawn out war? It’s not supplies nor support but the will of the soldiers and people to continue fighting. The saying that soldiers in grief will win battles is because grief can draw out their desire to fight. That was why the federation reported the news on the meteorites and the first invasion followed. However, that was met with total defeat. So how are they going to light up this will again? They can only use heroes.”

“The military higher ups, or perhaps the federation higher ups will create one or a group of heroes. Based on our situation, these heroes can only be chosen among those of us who survived or the starships that ran away. However, they ran away! While we held our ground for seven hours! The choice is obvious. Furthermore, we are the heroes acknowledged by the surviving veterans and officers. Thus.”

“We are heroes. The federation will definitely do this. When the brilliance surrounding us surpass the influence of the other team, that will be the turning point in finding them and fighting them.”

# Chapter 12-3

Zheng and Xuan's conversation stopped five minutes before arriving at the fleet. Even though five minutes of flight in space was a long distance and the other team might not have such a powerful psyche force user, they would rather be extra cautious. The worst was if the other team discovered Lan.

Psyche force users were basically defenseless unless they reach an extremely high level. They might even be weaker than a normal person. If Lan was found out, the other team could put her under surveillance in order to threaten the team. Psyche force users were the most valuable talents after all.

(To be honest, they may not even have a psyche force user. If that's true, wouldn't we be able to find them out easily with our advantage?) Zheng thought to himself but he knew he was being optimistic. One of the criteria to joining team battles was becoming strong enough. A team that couldn't even survive regular movies wouldn't be given such a chance. Psyche force users were a measure for this standard in addition to the number of unlocked members. The team with the psyche force advantage had the initiative advantage.

Zheng slowly closed his eyes as he lay in the liquid. A set of hieroglyphs floated in his mind. These hieroglyphs were the ones they found in the Mayan ruins. Xuan learned them from Imhotep then continued to study them back in God's dimension. He sent some common words to everyone, such as hide, psyche force, battle, run, mask.

"Keep in mind, you can write these hieroglyphs down at any time. In the cafeteria, on the wall. Write them down randomly to bait out the other team. If they are looking for us at the same time, they will care about what these character mean. We can use the opportunity to find out where they are. The second purpose is to muddle up their thoughts so that they couldn't figure out what we will do. A large quantity of information will drive them to think we have big plans or already discovered them. Anxiousness can open them up to mistakes. End the sentences with give,

take, or no when you don't mean anything. Repeat the words twice if they are real messages.”

Zheng said. “Are you sure the others can memorize these complex hieroglyphs in such a short amount of time? That seems unlikely.”

Xuan replied. “Right. It's not possible. The ones I am teaching are you, Lan, and Gando. Entering the unlocked mode will raise your learning ability to another level. The other three just have to know we are the ones who wrote these hieroglyphs. We will take care of the rest and find the other team.”

(Find the other team? What a difficult task. But there shouldn't be any worries with Xuan in our team.) Zheng fell asleep as he thought.

This world's civilian technology had reached what it should be in the future. Several hours in the container along with Zheng's recovery rate had healed his body completely. The wound on the bone in his right arm was also healed. The expedition troopers entered the fleet from the rescue ships. Many cried at once. The medical troopers brought the wounded to the infirmary. These several thousands who survived were treated as heroes.

“Yes! They are heroes! When the fleet abandoned their comrades, when the rescue ships were far away, when nearly a hundred thousand were killed in an hour, this squad crossed tens of miles then held their ground on top of a mountain for seven hours. Initial estimates from the military have that they killed over three hundred thousand bugs. Everyone, you have heard it. They are all heroes! They revenged for their comrades, they didn't dishonor our species as human, they are the true heroes among us!”

This fleet was composed of 82 level one warships, 17 special warships and countless supportive starships. The number surpassed the first invasion and could be said as the final force of the federation.

Aside from the military and federation officials, numerous reporters came along to interview the survivors. The military released a large amount of data, some embarrassing, such as the death toll and the fleet that ran away, but some they couldn't wait to tell everyone, such as

killing over three hundred thousand bugs. That was the reason the military loose on the control on news and allowed the reporters to interview.

A lot of what the troopers said were condemning the intelligence of the military but the majority were about the sergeant major Zheng and the three leaders he chose. Everyone agreed that the army would have been annihilated without these four people. They were saved by the four of them rather than the government.

“We can see that human is a species that is never short of heroes. We humans have noble spirits and wills that the barbaric bugs lack. You can't imagine a person who had his arm pierced through the bone stood in the frontline commanding the army for six hours. This is the hero who saved our army, Zheng! Unfortunately, the military told us his injuries were too heavy and his mind exhausted. He fell unconscious as soon as the army escaped danger. Such a noble soldier is protecting us and the federation. A moment of silence everyone to pay them the honor!”

A blonde young man watched the news on the TV quietly in the officer's lounge. A little hand suddenly turned the TV off. He looked over fiercely. That was a girl about eleven or twelve, grabbing his sleeves with a pair of pitiful eyes.

“Neos, Snow is not used to not using psyche scan. It feels like I can't see. I am bored. Come play poker with me instead of watching TV.” The little girl said.

Neos frowned as he shook her hand away. She laughed then jumped over and grabbed his sleeve again. “Come play with me, play with me.”

Neos scratched his head, threw the chocolate in his mouth then said. “Snow, I told you so many times not to bother me when I am eating chocolate! If you do that again, I will slap your ass! Aya, bring her out and get me a newspaper. I need to read the report carefully.”

A long hair girl walked over and took Snow away. A slender man in black clothes said in a cold tone. “What's wrong, Neos?”

He picked up another chocolate bar, his eyes gave off a violent sense.

“Don’t you feel that they look too bright? As players, we try not to make ourselves notifiable in movies because that can lead to unnecessary troubles. However, the brilliance surrounding them is too bright, even though part of it is unavoidable, but I think they are intentionally raising their influence. Hoho, looks like things are getting interesting.”

# Chapter 13-1

The surviving expedition army had returned from Klendathu. Less than five thousand made it back in this hundred thousand army. The survivors were all under Zheng's lead. Data had shown the army created a miracle big enough to save the higher ups from their crisis. The decision to change the general was brought up again. This general who emphasized offense might continue his position.

The media showed two extremes in their reporting. They mocked the inability of the military and federation on the one hand and praised the bravery of the five thousand trooper army with exaggeration on the other. How did people protect their pride in a defeat? They had to emphasize the strength and bravery their people displayed in the battle. Thus, every one of the five thousand trooper army was awarded medals and other awards. Hundreds were promoted to sergeants to lead the next army. And Zheng's group of four were mentioned the most and given the name Miracle 4.

"Good, very good." Neos smiled coldly as he read the newspaper. There were only three people next to him. The middle age man, a girl, and Snow.

He murmured. "They took the right step in some sense. The higher their exposure is, the lower our chance of doing anything to them. This is a fight of influence. When their influence in this world surpasses our position in the military, the only choice we will have left is to come to an agreement with them to exchange information."

The middle age man paused for a moment then said. "I don't understand why do you want to annihilate team China so much? Judging from the current situation, we are not enemies where only one team can live. We can attempt to contact them before the mission is revealed. I think they have some hesitation too. They definitely know more secrets about the movie worlds than us since they are the strongest team. Secrets like the two books the last team we came in contact mentioned. Perhaps we can find out more info of this type from team China."

Neos sighed. "Don't be naive. One reason is they are the strongest team,

and the second reason is how do you think of our team?”

The man paused. Neos continued calmly. “You don’t need me to say it right? I joined the team late. I have no combat ability other than my wit. The Sanjiyan bloodline only enhances calculation in the beginning stage. Telekinetic force surfaces after rank A and my combat effectiveness is extremely low before that. The other five people are split into two groups. Marnie and Rose are a couple. They are used to acting on their own. Hawfor leads the other group. They stick together merely because they are all scared of dying. So since we have the influence advantage in this battle, we have to gain more points and rewards. At the same time, I hope to obtain the position I should have in the team. We must find out team China’s members before they found out the incongruence in our team.”

The girl asked. “But how are we going to find them? Going through all five thousand people? It’s near impossible if you don’t allow Snow to use scan.”

Neos picked up a chocolate bar from the table. “Yes. Every event needs a turning point to continue. Judging from the hints, we will first assume this movie is a seven to nine people difficulty movie. Then we have to find the three to five people hiding. Although we can find some traces through the survivors, that alone won’t be enough. Furthermore, it requires at least a colonel rank officer to access the complete name and squad list. They can easily find out someone is investigating them if I do this. So I need a turning point.”

“Turning point?” The man and girl asked.

Neos gave a cold smile. “Correct. Do you know why I kept stressing we have to annihilate team China? The last reason is I need Hawfor to underestimate them. I need them to start trouble. I have been repeatedly warning them not to attack team China while reminding them that we have to annihilate team China. This will cause them probe. And that is my goal. Let them be the pawns to initiate the turning point. Make team China expose their weakness, or at least let us find out their strength. If they aren’t much more powerful than us, we won’t have to hesitate so much. If they are indeed so powerful, don’t you think Hawfor’s group is a

hindrance? Our team should be more powerful without them. Haha.”

“Zheng.”

Zheng turned around and saw Xuan eating a red apple. He smiled and said. “You won’t have energy without meat. You eat too little. It’s always fruits and veggies. That’s not enough nutrients.”

They were inside the cafeteria of the starship. It was lunch time. Zheng hadn’t come in touch with Lan, Zero, and Gando since boarding the starship two days ago.

Xuan frowned as he looked at the steak and veggies on Zheng’s plate. “The color is too ugly. Anyway, I have been paying attention to if any medium rank officers accessed our records but unfortunately, no. The military higher ups had sent several people over. It seems like they will be here to award us. The probability of the other team obtaining marshal rank is near zero. The highest they can reach should be senior colonel. Which means they haven’t done anything in these two days.”

Zheng said. “That’s good. What’s wrong? They wouldn’t need to investigate us if they aren’t planning to fight us.”

Xuan gave him a cold smile. “It’s the exact opposite. If they aren’t planning to fight us, they will investigate us to imitate safe contact. If they don’t show any action, then I can only think of two reasons. One, they plan to avoid us because the strength we showed scared them. This probability is near zero because we haven’t showed anything in front of them. Two, they are planning to test our strength directly.”

Zheng thought for a bit and said. “Aren’t your words contradicting themselves? Why would they have the confidence to test us when we are the strongest team? And if they want to beat us directly, what do they need their influence for?”

Xuan nodded with a smile. “Correct. Since the events are contradicting, it led me to think of a possibility. Their team isn’t working together. They are different from us in that they are still fighting for authority of the team. If that’s the case, it makes sense they didn’t investigate us. Their brain plans to abandon part of their members or use these members to

find their turning point.”

“Every puzzle needs a turning point to complete. Similarly, we haven’t come in contact with them. All they know is the four of us. Our paths are parallel if they don’t access the records to investigate us. They have to cross path with us to find out our members. Either by us initiating the contact or them. If my conjectures are correct, someone from their team will probe us. It may be on you, or me, or Kampa, or WangXia. However, it is most likely you.”

Zheng pointed at himself and said. “Why me? Do I look that weak?”

Xuan smiled. “No. Because the three of us look stronger. You lose out on the quality of a soldier. That’s why they will likely choose you. My suggestion is kill anyone who provokes! They will naturally get anxious with the death of a member and negative point. That’s when they will expose their weakness!”

## Chapter 13-2

Zheng's expression gradually turned more serious. He thought for a bit then pulled Xuan out of the cafeteria. He frowned as his eyes defocused. A minute later, he said with a low voice. "Two questions. Is someone from the other team really going to provoke or probe us? They should know that each death is negative 2000 points and this couldn't be their first team battle right? And two, aren't you worried about getting found out by the government if we fight in the starship?"

Xuan threw Zheng's hand off and replied. "We will talk about whether they know about the rules later. It's easy to deal with being discovered by the federation. This is the map of the starship I found through the computer. The only places with cameras are officer's lounge, the training room, and the weapon storage rooms. Which means if you get ambushed in these areas, run toward where people are with regular speed. You can also fire back with your gun. If you get ambushed in an area without cameras, they would have also chosen a time where no other people is around, then do your best to finish the fight in as little time as possible. We have to give them a shock!"

Zheng asked. "Give them a shock? Why? That would only make them act extra cautious against us. Then they won't expose anymore traces and finding them would be more difficult."

Xuan said calmly. "Because of the influence God gave us. They obtained a higher military rank as influence. Our compensation in influence is the ranking by God as the stronger team. We are the strongest of the three teams. Though it's not known how much stronger. There's also the possibility that they have members with special abilities like controlling your heartbeat through telekinesis, but have low stats. Or they can be strong as a team. Though basing on typical situations, your power should surpass them by a large margin. We know about this, but do they?"

"You look the weakest out of us four, that's why they will choose to test you. What if you suddenly show overwhelming power that can completely outmatches their whole team combined? What will be their reaction?"

They will think they are going against a super team multiple times stronger than them. God only mentioned we are stronger, but never said by how much. It can be a little bit or ten times. Even if they consider you as the leader of the team and the strongest person, will they think the other team members are way weaker? Once we established ourselves as a super team in their minds, their actions will naturally expose their weakness. We will have initiative at that point. The negative point will instill fear in them. The failure will also trigger the in congruence within their team. Which is why kill. Kill everyone that attempts to test you.”

Zheng accepted Xuan’s analysis. The whole team would gain a point from killing a person after all. If they make a mistake and someone dies, the rest of the team won’t have to worry about getting wiped by negative points. Furthermore, they were in a life and death situation.

He sighed to himself. He tried to simulate Xuan’s mind but his level of simulation couldn’t replicate Xuan’s thought process. So he had to switch to Honglu before understanding Xuan’s analysis and discovered things that Xuan didn’t notice, human nature.

When the other team falls into despair or destined failure, will they not make a final desperate move? Like programming the starship to self destruct or control another starship to attack this one. Secondly, Xuan forgot about the human nature of team China.

WangXia and Kampa were both determined soldiers and were familiar with living in the army. They were natural in this starship but what about Lan, Zero, and Gando? The three of them weren’t a part of the army. It would be easy for the other team to discover them if they pay more attention. But at the same time, they could find the other team through this.

Zheng twisted his hair as he continued thinking with Honglu’s mind. Suddenly he thought of a possibility. Xuan analyzed the scheme of the other team’s brain to get rid of the inharmony of the team. Could they bear the negative point for this or were they confident in annihilating team China?

He remembered Xuan's killing intent when the bear robot pointed the gun at them. As such a decisive person, he would take the next step to get rid of this problem without any hesitation, just like back in Alien.

Zheng was sweating when he came to this. He wouldn't have been able to understand everything if he wasn't in the third stage and simulated Xuan. Although this was still only a possibility, Xuan might have really decided to do this. He wouldn't have to bear any responsibility afterward when Gando was found dead. If Gando survives, he will have baited out several members from the other team. The rest of team China would come to him as saviors. That might or might not solve the problem with Gando but could certainly ease the tension within the team while killing the other team.

Zheng smiled bitterly. He didn't feel angry but just couldn't do anything about this. He would want to kill Xuan if he doesn't know about his past. But knowing Xuan's lack of feelings, he understood Xuan was doing it for the team's interest, to stay as the victor. Yet, he also saw Gando's past! Gando wasn't born as a selfish person nor someone who would do everything necessary to survive. He could become a comrade, someone that could be trusted!

Zheng stopped in the hallway. He didn't know what he should do next. Should he go argue with Xuan or go warn Gando at the risk of revealing him? Or should he not do anything and use his team member as a bait for the team's interest? That would dirty his hand and soul...

As he was thinking, his eyes suddenly came in focus and he jumped up. It was still a little late. A sharp pain registered on his shank as a piece of flesh got pulled off. He kicked on the wall and ran deeper into the hallway.

# Chapter 14-1

The wound on Zheng's shank wasn't deep, less than an inch in. The attack was blocked when it reached his muscles. However, it was too sudden. His current strength allowed him to sense any normal person coming within ten meters of him. A kind of sense beyond seeing and hearing and the unlocked mode. It was a mysterious sensation as depicted in wuxia fictions. He could sense killing intent even if the person was standing behind him as long as that person was not further than ten meters away. This was probably a sign of evolution.

He didn't sense any killing intent just then, or at least not within ten meters. Which meant the enemy was further away. At this range, the enemy could only use abilities or long range weapons. Most long range weapons were ineffective against him so this had to be either an ability or a throw by someone with immense strength. Both possibilities could be a threat to him.

As someone who had been through numerous life and death battles in this realm and witnessed all kinds of ordeals, he didn't panic despite the ambush. He encountered situations much more dangerous. This little wound had no effect on him continuing the fight.

Zheng's jumps were fast during the unlocked mode. A few jumps later, he made a turn then immediately reached for the wound. It had stopped bleeding but the wound was still there. He could touch the shape of it with his fingers.

Zheng slowly adjusted his conditions, qi, blood energy, and the unlocked mode. Since the other team's attack began, there was no guarantee they wouldn't go after the other members. He'd rather do as Xuan said and give them a surprise beyond their imagination, paint team China as the strongest team that could eliminate their courage to do any provocative actions!

A black young man standing seventy meters away. He held a twisted oak staff on one hand and a communication device on the other. He said to

the device. “Hawfor, I casted air blade at him. The air blade formed at a meter behind him. Normal people would have been cut in half by now but he jumped up so the air blade only got his shank. The strangest thing is his shank didn’t get cut off. This is too strange.”

“I can see it through the device. He probably has some defensive item. Let’s do this, cast a fireball then leave. The fire will scare him into hiding. Team China is nothing impressive. He could only stop the damage. Ok, you can come back then we will...”

Before he finished talking, a figure rushed out from the hall. He was so fast that neither the black young man nor Hawfor could see his face. They could only judge by his clothing and height that this was Zheng.

The black young man’s mind went into a daze. They were a hundred meters apart a second ago but only ten meters now. All he could do was raise the staff to cast an air barrier right in between them. However, Zheng’s reaction completely shocked him.

Zheng punched right at the air barrier. He had entered Explosion. Each step he took printed a footprint into this alloy floor. This immense strength and speed reached that of a super human.

Merely the pressure coming from this punch obstructed the young man’s breathing. Then he heard a glass shattering sound. The punch crushed the air barrier. It was beyond imaginable to him. The next moment, he felt a sharp pain on his chest as he flew back. He only flew for a meter before Zheng stepped forward, grabbed his chest and pushed him into the floor.

This series of attack knocked the young man unconscious. His physical stats were only two times that of normal people. Zheng could easily beat him even without Explosion. Two attacks in Explosion gave him fatal internal injuries. Blood was bleeding out from his mouth, nose, eyes, and ears. He looked like he wasn’t going to make it.

The whole process was less than three seconds from Zheng rushing out from the hall and knocking him down. Zheng showed his unstoppable strength. He picked up the communication device from the floor. No

sound came from the other end but he could see on the display that the other team was still watching through the device.

Zheng pointed at his eyes and said. “You know what this means. Not going to say much. You are at negative 2000 points.” He gripped his hand and crushed the device.

Zheng exited from Explosion and the unlocked mode. He looked at the black young man on the floor that could barely breathe. Then punched at his heart. Zheng received the notification from God at the same time. “Killed one member from opposing team. Team score, one.” And the points from killing a member. This young man wasn’t unlocked.

(I probably don’t need to use Destruction if it’s just giving a shock to the other team. That strength is too powerful and I don’t know what it will do to this starship. Explosion should be enough. Now then how should I solve the problem with Gando?) Zheng fell into his thoughts as he walked back into the hall.

A Caucasian and a black man were trembling on another starship. They looked at each other’s pale face. After some silence, the black man said. “Haw, Hawfor, we ran into a scary team. Team China is so much stronger than us. Are they one of team Celestial or team Devil? We are going to die if we fight them. No, I don’t want to fight!”

The Caucasian man slapped him on the face and shouted. “Calm down! F\*ck! Calm the f\*ck down! Don’t panic. Just think, how can everyone in the team be this strong. We accidentally picked their leader. Yes, this is definitely their leader and strongest member. He’s too powerful. I don’t think our whole team can take him in an encounter. He can only reach this level by chance.”

After a while, the black man said. “What about the other members of team China? They can’t be too much weaker than this person since they are in the same team. Out of the four people we know, the other three don’t look easy either. Don’t fight them, Hawfor. Team China is just stronger than us, we can’t take this risk!”

The Caucasian gave him another slap and continued shouting. “Calm!

You calm down a bit! I know we don't want anything to do with them. I never wanted to. But I don't have the authority to make decisions for the team. Even though I am the leader, Neos is the one who can command the other three, then there's the couple who don't listen to anyone! Right, Neos can analyze his strength. Let's go find him."

It was as though the black man didn't feel the slap. He grabbed the Caucasian man and said. "Didn't Neos said not to look for him after you leave? He said any contact can expose his identity. Are you really sure?"

Another slap. The Caucasian man shouted right next to the black man's ear. "F\*ck! Calm! I am only going to ask him some questions. I admit he's smarter than us but we are a team right? Nothing's wrong with asking him questions when there's a problem. And he said he wants to wipe out team China. We merely started what he wants to do. Even though we lost a person but we have good intentions. Anyway, let's go find him!"

## Chapter 14-2

“You are right. I knew Gando is the easiest one to expose himself out of the three of them. It can't be helped since he was just a normal person and he hasn't been through many battles. His fight on Klendathu was merely a display of his struggle. Do you really think a normal person can become a real soldier through just one disaster?”

Xuan poured himself a cup of water. He replied without moving his eyes away from the computer.

Zheng said in a cold tone from behind. “Then why didn't you think of a way to offset this? Why did you allow your own teammate to get discovered and killed? Do you still remember what you promised me?”

Xuan replied, still not turning around. “Of course. Then do you trust me? Do you absolutely, completely trust my wit?”

Zheng was surprised for a moment then nodded. “Yes. Of course I trust your wit. You said they will come attack us and it happened. All your analysis and prediction from the past were basically on point. “

Xuan glanced at him and continued. “Then you should trust that after they found out Gando and exposed their traces, I will be able to find them out before they can harm Gando!”

Zheng could say no more words of blame. He understood Xuan's capacity more than anyone else. Intelligence way beyond normal people and in a lot of cases, flawless. He trusts in Xuan's wit more than his own strength. Xuan's wit was also a critical factor to team China's grow in addition to Zheng's strength.

Now that Xuan had said this, it would be unreasonable for Zheng to assume anymore blaming on him. Thought that was a life they were discussing, especially when it was a life on a team member. Could one really so easily use a life as a chess piece? He couldn't do it. Furthermore, what Zheng worried about wasn't that Xuan's plan was lacking but rather that Xuan planned too much and integrated a kind of trial against Gando without anyone noticing. So that Gando would live if he passes and die if

he doesn't, just like back in Alien.

Zheng took a deep breath. "Give me the truth. Do you honestly want to let Gando live? Did you set any kind of trap to test him? If there are no such traps, I will trust you and follow your plan. If you did then I will stop you right here!"

Xuan replied calmly. "There are no traps to harm him nor any trial that he must pass. I need you to see this person, captain Rose. She wrote a report two days ago that they discovered a bug corpse on the moon of Pluto. That corpse was found in a human soldier's brain. She said there might be a kind of bug that can enter the human brain then control that person's actions. If my inferences are correct, She's part of the other team. I need you to see her. No need for a conversation, just see her. It will create some interesting reactions from the other team."

Zheng took details of this captain from Xuan. The army was on a rest these days since the reinforcements from Earth hadn't arrived yet and the higher ups were also on their way. The troopers could move within the starships freely so Zheng could find this officer on another starship.

"Ok, I will go see him. You sure you don't have any traps for Gando?" Zheng asked seriously.

Xuan nodded. His expression as emotionless as always. Zheng stared at him for a while before leaving. After he left the room, Xuan turned back to the monitor and murmured. "I lied. They took action as expected. A bug that can take control over the brain? It will be easy to kill off some people."

--

"Correct. Team China is really strong." Neos watched the video of the fight as he ate a piece of chocolate. The whole fight took less than three seconds. Zheng's decisiveness, his strength and speed, and the words he said as he pointed at his eyes. Neos watched it over a dozen times carefully paying attention to every movement. When he finished the whole box of chocolate, he snapped his fingers and the girl brought out another box from the drawer.

Neos said. “The circumstance is team China is really stronger. There’s no doubt to this. However, their power is probably not as high as you imagine. The strength this man showed might be a kind of explosive power, which is something that can only be used occasionally in fights. If he can keep this strength on at all times, he could totally survive by himself in Klendathu.”

“Secondly, about their members. They might also be strong but the gap between them and this man is definitely large. You can see it from how it finished the fight with such rush. Let me give you an example, when you enter into a fight, will you show all your strength including your trump card? I wouldn’t. I would hide my strength and probe the enemy’s strength and abilities before killing him. However, this man attacked his biggest power without any hesitation. One possibility might be that he can only fight for a short period of time. The more probable reason is he plans to establish dominance and make us feel threatened. Make us think that team China is extremely strong and thus expose ourselves. During this time, we won’t attack any of their members because of worries. In conclusion, even if team China’s other members are strong, they won’t be much stronger than us.”

The Caucasian man and a black man let out a sigh of relief. The Caucasian said. “Unfortunately they failed their goal. You are strong, Neos. Revealing their tricks just like this. We would have sacrificed a member for nothing and let the prey get away otherwise.”

Neos sneered and threw the chocolate in his mouth. “No, team China is actually strong, not some prey. The person who came up with this plan is equally impressive. He knew that our team isn’t working together and made use of this. He almost found us.”

Everyone’s expression changed suddenly. Neos said. “Simple reasoning. He just needs you to think team China is strong for a short time. That will take away your courage to probe anyone else in their team and the most probable thing you will do is come for me. I don’t know how he estimated my movements and thinking process but he definitely knows our team is split into multiple parts, one part ambushes them, and another part

searching for them. He just has to check who moved between starships and the people in the starship of the fight. Even though there's still a way to finding every one of us, he has located the starship we are in."

These words sent goosebumps to everyone. They glanced around the room as if a pair of eyes were peeping at them from the darkness. Neos chunked several pieces of chocolate and said. "Don't worry so much. There are around 3200 people in this starship. It won't be so easy for him. Furthermore, we are not the only ones who exposed our traces, they also did!"

He opened up the laptop and showed the screen to the others. A teenager was looking around in a lost. That was Gando!

# Chapter 15-1

(Correction, Lieutenant Ross to Captain Rose, a member of the other team.)

Zheng came to the seventh starship with the information. It was easy to navigate between starships with the mini shuttle. This kind of shuttles also served as survival capsules. Each one could only fit two people but they could sustain from the heat of entering the atmosphere. The speed wasn't slow either. The main female character escaped using the mini shuttle at the end of the movie. The only flaw was that the shuttle was only usable within space.

“Rose. Captain rank. A doctor in the biological study of Arachnids, done comprehensive research on the race. The first to come up with the hypothesis of brain bugs. Twenty one years old.”

Zheng muttered to himself as he read the info. He didnt know where Xuan obtained this information. The info wasn't detailed but listed all the crucial facts such as how she rose to this rank and her hypothesis. This hypothesis along was enough to prove her as a member of the other team.

(Is this what Xuan wants to say? That this is their trump card. Once they find out all our members, they can label us as being controlled by the bugs and use the federation to wipe us.)

Zheng thought over the plan carefully. This was what he would do if he was in the other team. This influence could give them the win as long as they knew the names and location of every member on the other team. The title of doctor also gave her words authority. The most critical point was Zheng's team performed too well. Once the higher ups doubt them as spies from the bugs, they would not want to take any chances. Furthermore, a bug that could enslave humans would definitely cause terror in society.

Zheng felt his heart getting chill as he thought through it. He even wanted to kill this Rose. However, remembering Xuan's words that told

him to just see this woman, killing her might mess up the plan and cut off any traces leading to the other team.

Zheng felt his brain turning into a mess. So he had to enter the third stage of the unlocked mode to simulate Honglu's thinking process and continue the analysis.

The light dawned upon him. He had doubts when Xuan said the brain of the other team would send members to get killed by them, yet there was no reason given. This seemed absurd but their brain planned to use the death of his team members to clear the path to his survival!

Their team must have had usually stayed closely together. The troopers around them also knew this. When one of them died in this starship in a strange death, the others could spread words of people being controlled by the bugs and they had gathered evidence of such persons. That way, the federation would capture team China without a doubt.

“Such a ruthless plan!” Zheng sighed and praised it.

He finally saw the level of plans people like Xuan was thinking at, not something normal people would come up with. Among the people he knew, Xuan, Honglu, and this person from the other team should be similar in wits. Xuan was above the other two in comparison. Zheng himself never thought of utilizing all available resources to kill the other team without any physical fight.

The officers in the starship was notified of the death of that young man within just ten minutes. What Zheng got told was the young man died in a sudden heart attack during a brawl. A team was formed to investigate anyone the young man came in contact with before death. The officers also take notice of any abnormality among the troopers.

Zheng sighed as he exited the unlocked mode. He had be in this mode to think like this while Xuan was thinking all the time. He watched the shuttle enter another starship, the one Rose was in.

“No, this isn't right!” Zheng growled as he clenched his fist. He murmured to himself as he left the shuttle. “He wouldn't think like this. He wouldn't do anything without any benefit in return. So benefits?”

Right!”

He immediately entered the third stage again to simulate Honglu. He twirled his hair. “Right, the benefit.”

Zheng thought back to the hero plan Xuan suggested. The reputation of the four of them grow to a peak that surpasses the officers. Then they will raise this influence and let their names spread throughout Earth, let the other team know team China is strong. Then he had Zheng kill the other team’s member without telling him the consequence, which made them step into the other team’s plan and he exposed Gando’s location. Everything...

All Zheng could do was sigh as he thought it through. Xuan was just Xuan. He avoided telling anyone the plan so no one would hesitate and mess up the plan. He simply enacted the plan without saying anything.

It was too hard to find the other team. So instead of looking for them, he had them show themselves. To make them do so, the thing he had to do was let the other team feel that they had won. Gando’s exposure was one piece, killing their member was the second. They were means to make the brain of the other team feel optimistic. Yet everything was within Xuan’s control.

The only thing Xuan needed to do was spread the rumors before they do. Rumors that these officers controlled by bugs planned to kill their heroes and all the troopers who fought in the battle to extinguish the hope of humanity. When both sides blame each other and the troopers were suspicious, the four of them could use their reputation to incite some troopers to act. Then they could gain control of the starships and open fire. If they get rewarded from the starships destroyed in this process, the amount would be...

Zheng shook his head and exited the unlocked mode. He then walked toward the dissecting room.

# Chapter 15-2

Zheng continued along the hall. As he walked pass an intersection, a muscular middle age man came out from one of the rooms. He was over 6 feet 2, Caucasian, seemed like from northern Europe. Some resemblance to Kampa.

Zheng walked past him quietly. His uniform denoted his military rank, a major. As they crossed each other, Zheng couldn't help but felt a thin layer of goosebumps over his body. He turned his head around a few seconds later but that man had turned around the corner.

Zheng recalled the man's face and stored it in his memory before continuing his way. Several more turns later, the dissecting room's door was in front of him.

Sweat soaked the middle age man's head after he cross Zheng. He quickly walked along the hall and made several turns before he lay against the wall. His shaking hand pulled out a pack of cigarette from his pocket. Then he lit a cigarette with an equally shaking lighter.

"Is Hawfor retarded? How could he even dare to provoke someone so strong? His power is immense. It felt like walking along an axe's edge when I merely walked past him. It was as though he could kill me with just one punch." He finished the cigarette in a few puffs then gripped his fist.

He turned around toward the shuttles' location. He was with Neos but when they learned Zheng was heading to the starship Rose was in, Neos sent their strongest man, Richard Tobias, to meet Zheng in this starship.

The strong tend to sense a link with people equally strong. Despite the strength Zheng showed in the fight, Neos induced it as an attempt to give a high impact by using his full power, and that Zheng wasn't as strong in actuality. What Richard had to do was prove this. Neos and the others trusted Richard's strength. So this was their display of strength against team China.

However, life was often more absurd and unpredictable than

imagination. The effect Neos hoped for didn't happen and instead, their strongest member got shocked.

This dissecting room could be renamed to Arachnid dissecting room. That was what happened in 99% of the cases here ever since the war started. The remaining 1% was on troopers killed by strange bugs. The first things Zheng saw upon entering were bug corpses lined up by the wall. He even saw a complete head of a blaster bug, which surprised him.

A young man and woman were chatting in this room. They looked at each other, then the man walked up to Zheng with a smile. "Hello, what are you looking for?"

Zheng scratched his head. He was confused at why Xuan sent him here to begin with, especially when the target was critical to Xuan's plan. He thought about it for a moment then just followed his instincts. He looked at the woman and said. "Hello, I am Zheng Zha, the leader of team China. Are you Rose of team Africa (Southern Flame)?"

Rose was a half black beauty, healthy dark brown skin and silky long hair. Beautiful facial features also. Though she seemed a little indifferent. When Zheng said the words team Africa, their expressions changed and looked like they were going to pull out their weapons.

Zheng immediately said. "I have no plan to fight you right now. Don't do anything hostile or I will kill you before you can attack. I am just here to see you."

He felt that was wrong. What did it mean to see them when they were still enemies? A fight might break out at any moment. It was not like they could sit down and talk it through.

The man stared at Zheng. "The two of us don't wish to become part of the team battle. You can fight however you want. We won't do anything against team China as long as you don't drag us in."

Rose pulled his shirt sleeve and said in a smile. "This is Marni, my boyfriend. Hoho, just like he said. We don't wish to join the team battle but don't you think you can bully us that easily. We aren't scared of any ambushes or challenges. Our combat techniques are special. We might

not be strong in combat but we can drag some powerful people along to death. You wouldn't think I am joking right?"

Zheng stared at her then nodded. "No. I think you have seen the video of the fight. You didn't panic when you saw me so what you said should be true. I am just curious are you not worried about being erased by God? Each member that died is minus one point in score and 2000 points. Even if you saved up a lot of points, how can you guarantee that your points don't go negative in a team battle?"

The young man laughed. He seemed like a half blood also, though closer to Caucasian. He pulled out three chairs then sat down with Rose. "This is an information we obtained from movies. Even though our teams are still in opposition, but the three of us have no intention to fight. Why don't we exchange information?"

Zheng had favorable impression of them. He didn't sense any killing intent. Secondly, their honesty was welcoming. And thirdly, he was cautious to the abilities they were hiding. He sat down and looked at them.

Marnie said. "We are very early members of team Africa. I have unlocked the first stage. But I did it two movies after we got our first team leader. Uh, our leader abandoned us when he was given the position by the Guide and went to team Celestial. So there was a second round of selection by the Guide. However, since the previous leader haven't died, the second leader only have the power to search God. There was no inquiry about transferring to team Celestial since he didn't reach the second stage. Team Africa's strength remained very low since then."

Rose brought them three cups of coffee. He handed a cup to Zheng and said. "There are no poison in the coffee. You don't have to drink it." She took a sip from her cup.

Marnie patted her hand and continued. "But we were lucky. We went through several low difficulty movies. One of them was Lord of the Rings. That was our first team battle. Fortunately, the other team was in the same situation as us where their leader went to team Celestial. Their

strength was reduced by a lot. We came in contact and decided to complete that movie together peacefully. We obtained a lot of points and rewards but what was more fortunate was that we entered the Dwarves tunnel with Gandalf. We killed Balrog with a plan. Gandalf gave each us a Rune Word stone, which is a quest item. It was said that this stone saved Gandalf the Gray from the fall and turned him into Gandalf the White. The effect is to allow the bearer to survive three times from a negative score. This will be our first time using it.”

Zheng was surprised. This information was so important. An item with such effect could save the whole team at times. He also told him which movie it was from and how to get it. Zheng took a few deep breaths then said. “Don’t you feel unfair telling me such an important info? Its value is immense.”

Marnie waved his hand. “It doesn’t matter much. This information is useless no matter how important it is if we die. I can see that your team must have experience movies much more dangerous than we did. You should be way stronger than us. So we don’t plan to fight you and use this information to exchange for our freedom.”

Zheng nodded. “We won’t enter a fight. I can make this decision. However, I still want to give you an information of equal value for the exchange. You know about The Mummy? Have you gone through that world?”

# Chapter 15-3

Zheng told them about completing the Scorpion King mission in advance in The Mummy world, the increase in difficulty and reward. He also added that the more difficult it becomes, the higher the reward would be.

“Even though the difficulty is high but The Mummy world is filled with various bonus missions. Many have generous rewards including quest items like the stone you have. These items are either extremely powerful, contain useful knowledge, or important to a team. Such as an offensive book and a resurrection book you can obtain from The Mummy. No words can describe how important these are to a team.”

This couple also seemed excited and asked one question after another on the possible situations one would encounter in the movies. Zheng basically held nothing back.

Once he finished talking, Marnie sighed. “Looks like we can’t complete this mission. My enhancement is on close combat but my strength is far from you. Her ability specializes in one versus ones. Our strength is sufficient enough to complete bonus missions in a large world like The Mummy.”

Zheng also sighed. “This I can’t help you. You can only rely on yourself for a lot of things. Your strength isn’t too bad. I met a large middle age man in the hall. He’s pretty good.”

Marnie laughed. “Yes. His strength is strong, the strongest person in our team. And he’s the only one who created his own ability.”

Rose tugged him. He realized what he just said and apologized. “These words shouldn’t come from us. We don’t intend to join the team battle. Our initial suggestion was to stay in peace with you since you are the strongest of the three teams. However, our team is rather unstable at the moment. Neos and Hawfor...”

She tugged his shirt again and took over. “Zheng, this isn’t worth hiding. Our team has two groups. One is the new official leader’s group.

He unlocked the first stage and is second to Richard in strength. The other group follows Neos. He's a genius criminal. Both sides want to take control of the team. So whoever can take down team China, they will gain control of the team. But me and Marnie know our capacities. As long as team China don't attack us, we won't use our powers to fight. And you accepted this condition."

Zheng nodded. "Right. I accepted it. However, there are circumstances that I can't control. Rose. You have the title of doctor in the biological study of Arachnids and the theory you proposed. Get what I mean? We also have a member with superior intellect. He definitely surpasses that Neos. Actually, neither of us have control over things now since their battle has started long ago. I don't know what's going to happen next."

Rose replied. "This title is the identity God arranged for me. When we were still on Earth, Neos had me publish that theory. He said this will put us within the strongest influence and guarantee the safety of team Africa. I thought about it for several days before getting what he meant. It seems like he's going to use this theory to kill you. Rest assure, we will stay away from this battle since we have decided not to participate. Our goal in this movie is simply survive. The military officials will be here in three to five days. Me and Marnie will find a chance to head back to Earth with their starships."

Zheng stood up with a smile. "Then it's decided. Let's hope the final fight doesn't start within these few days. Well, I envy you for being able to stay calm and choose your own path. Hope we can meet again. And next time we can complete a movie together." He turned around and headed to the door.

Rose and Marnie met eyes for a moment. Marnie said. "Zheng, this is a free info that we obtained from another team in Lord of the Rings. Some movies are more prone to team battles. These movies tend to contain large areas, a deeper story background, and have many hidden missions and quest items. The Mummy is one of such. There's also Lord of the Rings. That team also mentioned Transformers has a high probability of being one."

Zheng listened to his words then waved his hand and walked out.

At the same time, Richard had returned to the starship he was in. He didn't go straight to Neos but headed back to his room. Since team China now knew they were in this starship, Neos allowed Snow to use her psyche force ability to mask the whole ship. Richard didn't have to see Neos at the risk of being followed. They could get in contact through their minds.

"Yes. I didn't exaggerate. He's extremely strong, even terrifying. Let me make a comparison. My power level is 5, my created ability is 50, our team when fighting together is 100. He's at least 70 to 80 in a conservative estimate. This is just his own power level. Neos, I am starting to hesitate. Don't fight him if it's possible." Richard muttered as he smoked a cigarette sitting on his bed.

There was a long pause before Neos replied with a cold voice. "Are you not going to trust me too? Why don't you believe in me just like when you created your ability? We will die together if we lose. I won't be the only one who lives."

Richard took a puff. "Yes. I believe you. I believe there's nothing that can stop your wit. But I really have a bad feeling this time. I feel like team China isn't as simple as they had shown themselves. Don't you feel that we found that person too easily? He looks just like a normal person. He's like a new recruit more than a member of team China."

Neos breathed out. "There's nothing more to be said. The plan had been implemented. It's a perfect plan. As long as we find all the members of team China, we will be able to take down this strongest team! Believe in me. Team Africa is too weak. If we don't grow strong with such a good opportunity, we might get wiped the next time when luck isn't at our side. Richard, why don't you believe in me one last time?"

Richard exhaled the smoke. He hesitated for quite some time before saying. "I don't mind paying back my life to you if it's just myself. It was your wit that saved me before. But their lives are also on the line. We have the rune word stones, even if our points go negative..."

Neos said abruptly. “How can we go negative! What about our efforts? Our reasons to become strong? If we back down when we encounter a strong team, what will happen next time? Richard. Nothing more needs to be said. Just listen to me like you use to! I already sent Aya to capture that exposed rookie. He’s probably the weakest compared to the other four. Aya’s abilities are best suited for sneak attacks so don’t worry. Every step is within my calculation. Believe me that we will be the victors in the end!”

Richard sighed. “Then I will fight with you until the end. Don’t disappoint us.”

“There won’t be any problem! I don’t believe there’s anyone in their team that can see through my whole plan! Capturing this rookie is only the start. The time they come to search this starship is the time we find the evidence to use in our influence!”

At the same time. On another starship. Xuan looked at the monitor quietly. Gando just turned the corner in the hall. A girl followed far behind him. When the two of them disappear from the screen, Xuan turned around. Inside the room were ten squad leaders. They were standing at attention and everyone seemed excited as if they were looking at their idol.

“Follow the orders I told you. Dismiss.”

# Chapter 16-1

“That’s the situation. Gando disappeared.” Xuan said calmly as he took a bite off the watermelon.

Zheng returned from the starship Rose was in. On afternoon the next day, Xuan, Kampa, WangXia and Zheng agreed to meet during lunch. Xuan said this shocking news and dazed the other three.

Zheng slammed the table at once as he stood up. His movement was too big and knocked the chair tumbling. The other people in the cafeteria turned to him confused. When they recognized it was Zheng, they nodded with admiration. Some even stood up to salute.

Zheng smiled apologetically then said to Xuan in a low voice. “What do you mean? How can a person disappear? Are you joking with me?”

Xuan ate his watermelon leisurely. “Not joking with you. He indeed disappeared. I couldn’t find him in the surveillance system when I checked it at noon today. Then I checked the squad he’s in. He hadn’t come back to his room since last night. That’s our situation. Do you have any plans on mind?”

Zheng was biting his teeth with anger. He sat down and continued in the low voice. “It was you doing the analysis and talking the whole time and now you ask me if I have any plans? I remember you said you won’t test Gando with any traps, won’t let him die. What is this? He disappeared! You...”

Xuan put down the watermelon rind then picked up a red apple and took a bite. “Is he dead?”

Zheng was losing himself from anger and said in a rage. “How can I know if he’s dead! Uh. He’s not dead.”

He realized he was wrong after he said these words because once any team member dies, everyone else would be told they lose one point. Which meant Gando disappeared but he was safe, at least for now.

Xuan said calmly. “Get it? Nothing happened to him now. we just have

to rescue him before he dies. This shouldn't be difficult, right?"

After Zheng calmed down from his rage, he thought for a moment. "You mean he's currently under the control of team Africa? He should be in their starship and we just need to head over to find him? If team Africa can set up such a big trap, this won't be simple. I also have something to ask you. Now that you mentioned it yourself, we will hear your explanation in a bit."

"Explanation?" Xuan replied just one word. He seemed unconcerned. Once Kampa and WangXia finished eating, they all came to Zheng's room. Zheng told them his deduction, shocking Kampa and WangXia the more he went on. They stared back at Zheng dumbfounded.

Zheng ended his talk with. "It's shocking right? The plan is huge and there are traps within traps. I don't know how the details go but Xuan's plan is shocking."

"Not really. Hoho." Kampa laughed.

WangXia scratched his head and said. "Right. Compared to the plan, your deduction is more shocking. Haha. Never knew you are actually strong enough to guess what Xuan is thinking. Don't you think this is inconceivable?"

Zheng paused for quite a while before realizing what they meant. They basically said his intelligence shouldn't allow him to understand Xuan's thoughts. Once he got Xuan's thoughts, the actual thing unimaginable is him.

"Please. The question about my intelligence aside, is this what you are really thinking, Xuan? You use all of us as baits and set up a scheme surrounding the enemy's scheme. You even want to stir up a battle within the military. But don't we only get points for starships we destroy ourselves? Can you actually gain points like this? One careless mistake and we will sink into danger."

Xuan sat down and listened to him. When he finished, Xuan gave him a glance of praise. "Every plan comes with danger. The difference is its degree. The fact is the other team lost when they sent people to test you.

They lost whether they have those rune word stones or not. I merely borrowed the influence. Believe me. There is over a 70% chance of success if you follow my plan to the end.”

Zheng immediately followed. “The success rate is high but that’s betting with our whole team. Don’t you feel that everyone of us should be aware of what we are going to face next? If we are only following your arrangements passively, it feels...”

Xuan said. “We have a 70% chance to survive if we follow this plan. Otherwise, if you want to find out the other team’s members then fight them in close combat, which steps into their trap, we have over 50% chance of getting wiped. If I tell everyone the plan, there’s a 100% chance of it being leaked.”

“Why?” The other three all asked.

Xuan smiled. “To take precautions against the chance that they have a user who can control a person’s mind after Gando gets caught and prevent them from searching through his memory. This plan can’t be revealed to most team members. Even if Gando doesn’t get controlled or memory searched, there’s a high chance of him saying all our names out. Of course, in order to protect himself, he won’t say them all at once. I think he will gradually expose our names during these three to five days. That’s why the plan can’t be revealed to anyone in the team.”

Zheng sighed. So from what you said, you planned to let them capture Gando since the beginning. Is this really part of your plan? Why? I can’t think of how this plan can go on. The other team aren’t dolls that are waiting to get beat up. And from what I can see, they still have the advantage. How can you gain control over most troops? This isn’t an easy task.”

Xuan didn’t say anything. He walked over to the computer and turned it on then said as he looked at the screen. “This scheme was set up by the other team that makes use of parasite bugs as an excuse and the influence of their military rank. Once people think that we are being controlled by bugs, we lost. The most malicious part is that the only thing

we can do is find them out before they find us and kill them without anyone knowing it. Once they pointed us out first, we won't be able to counterattack because that will label us as being controlled."

"So I had to set another scheme over this scheme. Zheng, your improvement is impressive but your thoughts entered the wrong path. That is why do we have to be scared? This is a double edged sword. The key to their accusation is our achievement in the battle, that we lasted seven hours and killed hundred thousands of bugs. This makes the military higher ups feel relieved but they would also suspect us. But don't we have anything to rely upon? This achievement is our biggest support!"

"When a person with hero status get doubted, who would it benefit the most if this person is a real hero? The Arachnids! If we aren't controlled by bugs, then everyone will think that it helped the bugs when we get killed. Instead of letting these people regret after killing us, we will make them hesitate right now. This is the key to my plan."

"The military officials will arrive in three to five days. If they think they have won by that time, they will release our information to the officials. Which will make the troopers capture or isolate us. My plan also executes at that same time. Since they are using the high ranking officials, we will use the low ranks. No need to make the officials believe us. We just need the troopers to believe us. The officials are controlled by the bugs. They slander the heroes and took control over the general in order to kill off all the troopers."

"The key to give them the belief of victory is to allow them to capture Gando!"

# Chapter 16-2

Gando sat on the ground. He looked miserable with a pale and swollen face. It was like when your face was roughly squeezed and kneaded by a bunch of men. Though if you were to look at the wounds closely you would see the round and swollen areas looked like stings by bees.

“What do you think? This is the second night already. Do you still think your comrades will come save you? Don’t kid me. They don’t even know where you are. Plus, will they dare to attack us in front of countless troopers? Stop being naïve. Everything in this world is based off of interests. Just say it. Tell me how many members are in team China, each member’s abilities and powers, their enhancements, and their face and names. Say it and we will be sure to let you go. We can even give you a rune word stone that allows you to survive negative points. How’s it?” Gando’s eyes were shut. A young man’s voice appeared directly in his mind.

He wasn’t an idiot. As someone who muddled his way in the underground through life, participated in illegal racing, and lived, he understood some things. Just like what the voice said, interest is the basis of everything in this world. What was his life worth? If they didn’t still have a use for him, this team would have killed him for the points and rewards long ago. He was new to this realm but not an idiot in the real world.

“You don’t need to say anything more. It’s my end that I fell into your hands. Just kill me as you want. I won’t reveal any information about team China.” Gando replied in a cold tone.

“You really think we will hesitate and not kill you? You would be right under normal circumstances but you underestimated the variety of abilities a team has. Remember the girl who attacked you? Her ability is witchcraft. She’s the heir of an ancient African tribe. The African bloodline enables her to learn witchcraft rapidly. She can control the souls of bees to create poison and the souls of trees to communicate with the dead. Of course, she isn’t skilled enough yet so there might be flaws.

Information that she extracts from your soul might not be intact and goes against my plan. It isn't that we can't kill you but rather we don't want to take the risk unless necessary. I will give you one more day. If you don't say anything by the time the military generals arrive, I will resort to killing you. Think about it."

A weight fell on Gando's heart and he felt a chill throughout his body. This was something more horrifying than death. Even his soul would get manipulated. The surrounding fade into complete silence and darkness again after the voice disappeared. Ever since he fell unconscious after being bit by the bee, he hadn't heard any other voice or saw any light. All there was left was the pain. His other senses vanished. The other team only communicated with him through their minds. He hadn't even seen anyone from the other team.

Gando's inner thoughts aside, Neos was devouring a box of chocolate in a room not far away from Gando. He finished the whole box, sucked his fingers and frowned. Several people around simply stared at him the whole time. A Caucasian man said. "Just say what's on your mind. Holding it like this makes us uncomfortable. What did that man say? Just kill him and let Aya extract his memory!"

Neos replied without raising his head. "Hawfor. Are you going to bear the consequence if we miss a person or two then get sneak attacked leading to the death of people in our team? Or perhaps you can be one of those who dies?"

Hawfor gave an awkward smile. "Don't. Don't. You see I was just worried about getting the information on team China. You are smarter than me so say what should we do?"

Neos sneered. He pointed a finger at his forehead. "Things are developing unusually smooth. Our captive isn't a tough man. He's merely acting. Someone who's tough will try to delay us with rambling. We just need to wait. He will tell us everyone's location. Furthermore, no one can find the place we are holding him unless they use psyche scan. Snow has masked the area. So they had to either show their psyche force user or had their whole team come out. We don't have to spend the efforts to find

them. We have absolutely advantage. But..."

"But? But what?" Hawfor asked curiously. Everyone else showed the same expression.

Neos exhaled. "I don't know why. I can't help but feel that something's wrong. Things are going too smoothly, like we are walking into a trap they had set up. This feeling makes me uncomfortable!"

Richard said. "You mean they intentionally allowed us to capture this man? Then have him reveal false information to misguide us. When we reveal ourselves, team China will surround us?"

Neos shook his head. "I already considered several solutions. And this man wasn't acting when he got captured. He was really unaware and unprepared. His strength is also that of a normal person. I am not worried about him. However, when all these events add up, something just isn't feeling right."

A mixed blood girl said. "Several events? What are them? Let us know."

Neos nodded and pulled out a box of chocolate from the drawer. He picked one out and took a bite. "First. Why did that person from team China suddenly used his most powerful ability to establish dominance? I know Richard gave him a high rating but you should be aware that his actual strength isn't as high as the video shows. That's an ability like the 'berserker' you created. What made him display this strength to us?"

"Second. Why did he meet with Rose? I can think of two possibilities. One, Rose betrayed us. They use our lives to exchange for mercy. However, that's not possible. They have the rune word stones, but how can they guarantee that team China won't kill them? Even if their abilities are special and can trade one for one, that still doesn't give them enough confidence to do so. The second possibility is team China became aware of my plan. This critical key to my plan is Rose's military position and authority. Do they want to kill Rose? Threaten her? Draw her to their side? The question returns that Rose doesn't have to do this. The two of them are still alive at this point. They didn't give us any warnings or ask for help. I can't understand this no matter how I analyze it."

“Third. It was too smooth when we captured their member. So smooth that it makes me suspicious. Does team China know of my plan? Perhaps not the whole plan but they but speculated a thing or two. This is very likely.”

Neos muttered to himself. The others looked in silence as they listened to his analysis. After some time, Aya said. “So what should we do next? Stop the plan? Or contact team China for negotiation using the influence advantage we have?”

He bit off a piece of the chocolate and said fiercely. “We have no choice but to continue at this point. If they really are aware of my plan, then sending someone to probe already signified our failure. The only thing we need to do is continue. I admit there are people more intelligent than me but that won’t be in team China! It isn’t the one whose fighting with me!”

“Do as we had planned. Get him to reveal team China’s information before the military higher ups arrive. Snow will determine the truth of his words using psyche force. Then we will proceed as planned!”

# Chapter 16-3

“Proceed as planned.”

Xuan looked at them expressionlessly. He described the plan so simply that they were shocked. Not because of its complexity but rather that it was too simple. So simple that they were confused.

“WangXia’s mission is to lead the troopers to watch TV at a place. There will be an obvious signal. When it appears, bring the troopers to take over the starship. You can fire at any starship that doesn’t identify themselves.”

“Kampa’s mission is the same. You can attack any starship that doesn’t identify themselves. I will go rescue Gando with Zero and Lan, that’s if he’s still alive. Zheng’s mission is head over to the flagship and block off the team Africa members in that ship. It will depend on the situation as to whether you should kill them. However, if they lose their ability to fight, it’s best not killing them. We can distribute the points and rewards among the team. It isn’t beneficial to the team’s development if you alone get too strong.”

His tone sounded apathetic, as if he didn’t care a bit. The other three people were still in a daze. Zheng asked. “Is the solution just this after such a big set up? That’s unbelievable. I thought it would be more complex.”

“What’s complex is within here.” Xuan pointed at his head. “The real action is easy to complete. It’s just like a war. The complex part lies on the strategist while the soldiers just need to fight the war. If the strategy gets so complex that everyone needs to be constantly thinking, it isn’t a good one. I will take care of the planning. What we have to do now is wait. The military higher ups will arrive in ten hours. My plan will have a result at that time!”

The waiting finally came to an end. The military higher ups arrived at this expedition army along with eighty ships. Aside from the significance of the higher ups coming to the front line, what was more important was

a hundred thousand troopers and supplies replenishment. The morale of this army recovered a little bit with the backup. The surviving veterans all became sergeants and even lieutenants. Zheng's group of four were also given new arrangements.

The military originally wanted them to join the intelligence department and as training officers. However, part of the military wanted them to continue leading the expedition army because these thousands of sergeants and lieutenants had been accustomed to their leadership, plus their abilities surpassed over 90% of officers in this generation. After a discussion, the higher ups decided to honor them with lots of medals and promoted Zheng's rank to colonel, Kampa, Xuan, and WangXia's ranks to lieutenant colonel. The medal and promotion ceremony takes place the next day in front of reporters broadcasting the event live to Earth.

"Tomorrow is the outset of breaking apart their scheme!" This was the answer Xuan gave everyone.

They were rather confused at what he meant. However, due to their trust in Xuan's ability and that there was nothing they could do, they could only believe in his decision.

Time slowly passed during this wait. Gando who was still locked up in another starship was overtaken by worries. He had revealed Zheng, Xuan, Kampa, and WangXia's strength, abilities, weapons, and whether they were locked after the military higher ups arrived. That was all just for surviving. He also held back because of surviving. He knew the rule that interest stands above everything in this world. Killing him would give anyone points and ranked rewards. Once he said everything about every person, he would definitely get killed!

Neos also gave him a firm reply. If he doesn't give them the names and locations of everyone else in team China, they are going to kill him and search his soul.

Neos watched the TV quietly. There were a Caucasian and a black man in this room. They were resting with their eyes closed. However, if he was to make any movement, they would instantly open their eyes. This

demonstrated that these two people were way stronger than him. He couldn't compete physically without the bear robot.

Gando was talking to himself internally. He kept going over the possibilities of dying. Suddenly, his eyes came into focus for an instant. He saw a series of characters and symbols move across the TV. These characters were not so obvious. They appeared on a bar on the bottom of the screen just like the usual ads.

The TV was showing a midnight shows, replay of dramas and movies that had been recorded, all automated by the starship's computer system. These characters appeared rather suddenly, these hieroglyphs that he familiarized himself with when they came back from Klendathu. As one of the members who had unlocked the genetic constraint, he was able to memorize these hieroglyphs and their meanings.

“Reveal everyone other than Lan to the other team. Say that you want to save the psyche force user as your amulet, but let them know that the psyche force user doesn't have any offensive abilities. Tell them you will only reveal this person when you get to safety.”

Gando read over the message carefully. This message was broadcasted repeatedly like ads so he wouldn't miss anything. Once he understood the message completely, he felt relieved but also became anxious. It was different from waiting without any hope. Once this hope came into existence, he started becoming suspicious and thinking of various thoughts. This was going to be a sleepless night for him.

The next day. Zheng and the others woke up and cleaned themselves early. It wasn't for the ceremony since this world was not important to them. What was important was today's battle. Xuan made it sound simple but Zheng who knew the details of both teams' plans was quite nervous. He didn't receive the notification of Gando's death last night, so he was also worried about Gando.

“One hour left. Xuan, don't disappoint me!”

On the other starship. Neos and several other people were interrogating Gando. Neos frowned as he ate his chocolate. “This is your last chance. I

am only going to ask once more. If what you say are lies or you keep your mouth shut, I will kill you then search your soul. First question. How many members are in team China?”

Gando stood there unperturbed. “There are two more people, a psyche force user and a sniper. The sniper uses a Gauss sniper rifle, which is extremely powerful and can pierce through starships like this one. His name is Zero. You can find him by searching through the trooper database.”

Neos turned his head to the little girl. She nodded her head with her eyes closed. “Yes, what he said is the truth.”

Neos continued. “Good, what about the psyche force user? Tell us his name and you are free. We can even give you a rune word stone so you won’t get killed by negative points.”

Gando shook his head. “I don’t trust you. So I am going to keep her name. however, her abilities are only Soul Whip, Psyche Scan, and Soul Link. She’s a girl and doesn’t have any combat abilities herself. Her physical stats are several times stronger than normal people but I don’t think she can take on you alone. Once you get me to safety, I will tell you her name. I won’t reveal her otherwise. She’s also unlocked. I don’t think you will let the points and rewards get away.”

The little girl nodded. “Right, he’s still saying the truth.”

Neos bit off half a bar of chocolate. He raised his head and frowned as he pondered. After quite a while, he said. “Ok, I will allow you to withhold her name. I will let you live. But I am going to ask you some other question. I will kill you if you don’t answer. I will kill you if you lie. First, why did you suddenly thought it through to tell us these today? Did anyone notify you? Who is this person? When? Tell me all of these!”

# Chapter 17-1

Gando's heart raced rapidly. That moment of danger almost forced him into unlocked mode. Death if he doesn't answer. Death if he lies. And similarly, it will likely be death if he says the truth!

"Someone notified me. That person is Chu Xuan, the one who was promoted to lieutenant colonel. The time was when we were returning to space in the starship."

Gando said his words slowly. When he got to the last question, he revealed a trap he had been hiding. He mixed up the time that he was notified of the meaning of the hieroglyphs and the time he was notified of the message!

He didn't know how they identify any lies but what he said was the truth. Though it was truth that was hiding something. The first time Xuan gave him the hieroglyphs was when they were returning from Klendathu. The message on the TV was the second time.

It was a gamble. A play on words for his survival. Pass and he would live. Otherwise, it was death!

The little girl nodded. "Neos, it is the truth but it doesn't feel like complete."

Gando smiled. "Of course it isn't complete. I haven't said the content of his message. Do you want to know these too?" He turned to Neos on the last line.

Neos took a bite of the chocolate and nodded.

"The message is to reveal all the members aside from our psyche force user. The time is on the last day. This is all I know. I am not lying. As long as you can get me to safety, I will tell you the name of that person."

Neos looked at the little girl. She nodded quietly to indicate the truth of Gando's words. He then torn off the package of a bar of chocolate and sat there thinking to himself.

Neos then asked. "When he notified you, was it only yourself or the

whole team? This question is important. You have to reply truthfully!”

Gando answered without any delay. “He said it to all of us at the time, not just me, but the whole team was notified.”

The girl nodded again. “Yes, Neos, it’s the truth.”

Gando was thinking to himself as he watched this blonde man devouring chocolate. He didn’t know what Neos was thinking right now but he was led into a wrong path since the beginning of the question. He wouldn’t be able to figure out Xuan’s thoughts. The probability of the rest of team China coming to rescue him would be higher.

Neos’s thoughts indeed went into the wrong path. In his thoughts, since Xuan had told everyone in team China this message so many days in advance, his intention was to increase the survival rate of any members who get caught. Team China was the strongest team so even when one person gets caught, they could rescue him as long as they could find the location. They could also give team Africa a critical attack at the same time. Withholding the psyche force user’s name was the chip to the captured member’s survival.

“If this is the case, there is nothing to be worried.” Neos nodded and turned to the rest of his team. “We will follow our plan. Tie him up with Gundanium alloy. Snow monitor him. We will proceed to our next action. Richard and Hawfor, go meet the military higher ups in the flagship. You have to protect these people in case they make a last desperate effort. Aya and I will head to two starships intended for information networks. Snow keep us connected with Soul Link. Once the higher ups received our report, we will announce throughout the fleet and have the troopers arrest these five people! It will be good if they resist. Any resistance signifies our victory! Haha.”

Today was a lucky day to all the surviving troopers because the military was going to award them for their bravery. Everyone who lived from the expedition would be promoted to an officer after the ceremony. They would lead the newly arrived army of a hundred thousand in this battle. These troopers were the heroes of the federation.

Compared to the thousands of heroes, there were four heroes among the heroes. These four people saved the thousands of troopers from crisis. They saved the pride of the human race. So that people wouldn't fall into the thought of humans being lesser than bugs. They commanded several thousands of troopers and killed off hundreds of thousands of bugs. Their achievement would get recorded into history. They were going to be awarded medals and titles and get promoted to colonels and lieutenant colonels to lead the army in the war of revenge.

Troopers everywhere were celebrating. Everyone was excited with the promotion and watched as their heroes become their officers in charge. Many of the troopers had acknowledged their command after the final hours in Klendathu. Everyone believed that they wouldn't lose as long as these people were in command. Their lives would be guaranteed the most.

“Emergency message! Emergency message!”

Less than an hour before the ceremony, the alarm system rang. All the TVs and screens on the starships changed to that of a blonde young man. He was dressed in an officer's uniform, handsome and cool, as if he was born a soldier. The young man brought out a piece of paper then said to the screen. “About a month ago, we found several human bodies in an Arachnid planet. Through dissection, we discovered bugs parasitized in the brains of these people. The bugs didn't destroy the humans' instincts, memories, nor language ability. They looked just like us but they were slaves under the control of the bugs!”

“According to Arachnid Biologist Dr. Rose's report, parasite bugs have the special ability to control humans. They would blend themselves into the human world and might even attain a high political and military position, like officers or strategists. Of course, this is only my speculation.”

“However, according to the information we received, there are five people from the expedition who match the traits of Dr. Rose's report. The bugs deceived us to make us think of them as heroes. It is unfortunate that I have to say this, the four heroes who rose up from this battle and one who was hiding were likely slaves parasitized by bugs. The reason the

bugs enacted the plan with such resources and how their achievements were so glorious was because the bugs wanted to enter the core of our society, to attain political influence, then push the human race into an abyss!”

“These five people are Zheng Zha, Chu Xuan, Kampa Lovski, Wang Xia, and Zero. These are their photos. All troopers close to them have the obligation to capture them. We will perform craniotomy on them. If they are actual heroes, we will offer our sincerest apologies. So, the five of you please don’t resist. Otherwise, troopers are allowed to open fire and eliminate the bugs. This is our...”

The screens shook violently then Xuan’s expressionless face appeared on the screen.

“I am Chu Xuan.”

# Chapter 17-2

Xuan sat in front of a large screen. His expression was so apathetic which made him seem more like a soldier than that blonde young man. The fact was he lived with the standards of a soldier before coming to this realm. The impression he gave to the troopers was much better than Neos's.

“According to Arachnid biologist Rose's report, parasite bugs possess strong intelligence. They could even stir up conflicts within ourselves, to make us enter a civil war. This is the danger of parasite bugs. Their intelligence can even allow them to discover vulnerabilities within our society.”

“Dr. Rose's report noted that these bugs usually sneak into our society then kill important figures to decrease our morale or cause chaos and civil war. It is difficult to distinguish this type of bugs. However, we aren't totally out of means. The most important method is to observe their reaction. Because our report mentions that the most important method these bugs use to communicate is through their minds.”

Neos immediately felt things were bad when Xuan appeared on the screens throughout the fleet. He was in one of the information network starships that were responsible for transmitting signals among the fleet and from Earth. Which should mean that as long as this ship wasn't overtaken, he was the only one who could send any signals out. How did Xuan's signal go through to the fleet? The most shocking thing was Xuan's image also appeared in Aya's starship!

When Xuan got to communication through the mind, Neos's heart beat violently. He realized the piece that was missing in his calculation. No, if he missed this piece, then he didn't know how much more before that were completely wrong. Even though he only heard up to this point, Neos's heart had fell into despair. If he guessed it right, the next words from Xuan were going to condemn their team with death. Furthermore, they wouldn't even stand any chance resisting.

“Zheng Zha headed to Dr. Rose in person when we recognized the danger of these bugs to ask for more details on the dangers and habits of them. On the way there, he discovered a suspicious high ranking officer loitering around Dr. Rose. This is that officer’s image.”

After Xuan’s words, that middle age man appeared on the screen. It showed him walking pass Zheng. Both of them seemed normal but when the man returned to the ship Neos was in, his lips moved without uttering any words. Sometimes his lips didn’t move but his expression looked like he was communicating with someone. The surveillance video stopped after he returned to his room.

“This is the first high ranking officer we suspected of being parasitized. I tracked their traces afterward. In these few days, I discovered that they can understand each other without actually talking. This is only limited to these six people. The following videos show their suspiciousness.”

“So I advised the squad leaders on duty in the flagship to take precautions at all times to protect the incoming military officers. Finally, right as the officers arrived today, two of these six people had already moved close to them. The incoming officers also showed signs of abnormality. They attempted to capture troopers who were in Klendathu without going through any process of suspicion and obtaining permissions. The ten squad leaders I advised had been this disarmed as of right now. The following are videos of two of these people who just made the announcement to capture us.”

His fingers pressed the keys then two small screens appeared on the big screen. The screens showed Neos and Aya respectively. They were both saying the words that Neos said. However, the timestamp on the screen showed that they said every single word at the same time, the same words without any manuscripts on hand. It was like two sides of the same person saying the same words, at the same time, with the same tone, and doing the same movements. This was the sign of Soul Link!

The troopers watching the screens erupted. They talk about the two nearly identical screens. Doubts filled their faces. When a dozen disarmed troopers appeared on the screen with the officers and the two suspected

officers on their sides, the troopers went into an uproar.

“Based on this series of evidence, especially the trait of communication through the minds, I have reason to believe these six people have been parasitized by the bugs. Furthermore, the squad leaders I advised to protect the officers had been disarmed. We also have reason to believe these bugs are attempting to annihilate us. We killed our way out of that sea of bugs. Is there anyone that still is willing to follow our lead? Let us kill our way out of the bugs’ scheme again!”

Neos sat on the floor on his knees. He almost fainted when he heard Xuan’s words, then he coughed up a mouthful of blood. But he bit his lips and held on. He didn’t faint from the fury at the end.

Neos grabbed a chocolate bar from his pocket with his shaking hand. He put the chocolate along with his blood in the mouth, then he just sat there in silence. He was going over the gaps of his plan and everything he still couldn’t get in his head.

Blood was still flowing out of his mouth as he ate the chocolate with a bitter smile. When the chocolate bar was finished, the focus on his pupils slowly dissipated. The packaging paper slid off his fingers and fell to the ground. Neos died by his seat.

At the same time of Neos’s death, Zheng was already riding the shuttle to the flagship. When the shuttle entered the ship, two other starships suddenly opened fire at two of the starships that came with the military higher ups. These two starships immediately evaded. One evaded in time and dodged the missile by a hair. The other wasn’t so lucky. The missile hit its left wing and blasted a large opening. It was unknown how many died in that explosion.

“All starships send your signal to surrender unconditionally. Any starship that doesn’t send its signal will be suspected of parasitized by the bugs. All visiting officers in the flagship will be isolated for investigation. Our highest priority is to guarantee Earth’s safety in the face of these terrifying, dangerous, and destructive bugs! We can not let any starship escape our vision. We can not let them return to Earth!”

Xuan crossed his arms and said emotionlessly through the screen.

# Chapter 18-1

Sound didn't travel in space. The explosion of a starship being hit by missile would otherwise be loud enough to damage everyone's hearing. And so Zheng didn't know everything happening outside. He walked off the shuttle.

Troopers were running around in panic outside the shuttle. Their eyes expressed an emotion of fear. Zheng noticed that most of the troopers present were the ones who came along with the military higher ups and never actually entered a battlefield, so they appeared inexperienced in an emergency situation in comparison to the veterans. They were only following orders from their superiors. These troopers he saw were commanded by some veteran sergeants and were in a standoff with another group. The other group had their own sergeants and even lieutenants. It seemed like these were the officers that came with the backup.

The veterans paused in surprise as they saw Zheng. They then saluted at him. One ran over to Zheng and said. "Sir. The majority of troopers in the flagship have been incited by parasitized humans. We currently reached contact with a quarter of the people in this starship but rest assure, we are negotiating with them. I believe there will be result soon."

Zheng saluted back. "We can't afford to negotiate slowly. We must stop them before they hurt the generals. If they parasitized the generals, a lot of our military secrets will be exposed to the bugs. Let's do this. Give me command of the army and begin infiltration. Shoot to kill any troopers who attempt to prevent us from entering the core of the flagship. This is a cruel decision but do your best for the people on Earth, for us human's victory in this war, troopers!"

"Yes!" This trooper shouted in reply. He saluted then ran back. He informed his squad and the other squads. They opened fire against the other group in the standoff.

A soldier who hadn't experienced the massacre of a battlefield had a

long way from becoming a veteran. A veteran's hands wouldn't shake when they kill. They wouldn't act with mercy against organisms that threaten them or the targets of a command. The difference in their techniques were minute in comparison.

The other group in the standoff entered a chaos with this sudden attack. They never thought these troopers would suddenly open fire. Even as troopers, these people who came from the peaceful Earth never saw the terrors of war. The concept of war was merely commands from their superiors to them. The veterans gave them a lesson with blood, blood that was theirs.

As Zheng was heading toward the central conference room, veteran troopers near the shuttle led their groups to open fire and spread his command out. Any veteran who saw Zheng cheered and attacked more fiercely. It was usually several shouts for the other groups to put down their weapons before their fired decisively. Zheng saw several instances of this already.

"Is this really going to work, Xuan? I said the words like you told me. The whole flagship turned into a chaos. I am worried. We seemed to have the advantage but we can't just kill the generals, right? That would take away our advantage of influence. If we don't take care of this revolt and let it continue, we will lose control of the troopers once the federation come to their senses. Since the parasite bugs couldn't control every official on Earth." Zheng said to Xuan through Soul Link.

After he said those words, over 80% of veteran troopers followed his order and seized control of the army in the flagship. And Lan had started using her Psyche Scan and Soul Link. She also started attacking team Africa's psyche force user with Psyche Whip. The other team had lost support from their Psyche Scan and Soul Link at this time. Team China stood on dominant position at this point. Zero and Lan headed to save Gando.

"Not an issue. This is merely an experiment. The result seems great. I already received 1000 points. What about you?" Xuan evaded the question and asked Zheng.

Zheng paused for a moment then said. “Now that you mentioned it, I seem to recall a notification of 1000 points. Eh? Killed one of them? What happened at somewhere else? Why did I suddenly receive 1000 points?”

Xuan said calmly. “Kampa sunk a small starship with missiles just then. A small starship gives 1000 points, the larger starships should be several times higher. Then this is it.”

Zheng was sweating. “Wait. Wait. What do you mean ‘then this is it’? Your tone scares me. Stop being busy sinking starships. You haven’t answered me what we should do when they came to their senses. If you killed too many people, delaying the next battle, and the military higher ups want to hold us responsible, what should we do in space? I don’t want to wipe ourselves after just winning against team Africa!”

Xuan’s smile transmitted over. “Don’t worry. I have already considered the aftermath or I wouldn’t have made such a big movement. Do you still remember the team on Klendathu? They can’t just stay there safely. God is fair to every team. Stronger teams encounter more danger but that doesn’t mean weaker teams are safe. You wouldn’t call this the world of horror movies instead of amusement parks otherwise. If the first battle happened on Klendathu, the second battle should be on Planet P. How are they going to go from one planet to another? I don’t think they have space vehicles. The only possibility is the appearance of bugs that can survive in space. And these bugs will attack us!”

Zheng was confused and asked. “Bugs that appear in space and they will attack us. But what does that have to do with our situation? You mean the bugs are coming to attack us now?”

“Not immediately but that won’t be far away. Count how many days have we been here. It’s fifteen days including today. There are less than five days left. Judging by the time, we will return to God’s dimension in safety if the bugs don’t come out soon. God will never consider living through a movie without actual dangers. It ever only increases the difficulty. Furthermore, if the bugs have intelligence, I am creating the best opportunity for them to attack. Let us see what kind of difficult mission it created for us!” Xuan said with a sense of enthusiasm.

Zheng sighed. He didn't have such nearly insane intelligence nor the enthusiasm for new challenges. He wanted everyone in the team to survive and grow strong. But reality always pushed him on the forward of a wave.

Zheng was walking forward when they talked. He was going to say something then a squad of troopers blocked his front. These troopers were led by a veteran. There were sounds of gun fire coming from ahead.

A veteran ran over and saluted. "Colonel, the central conference room is ahead. However, the opposing force setup a fire zone. We will get attacked as soon as we show ourselves. Those people might have been controlled by bugs. Nothing we said had any use. Damn it. We can't use tactical nukes here!"

The federation's military forces and especially the infantry were too weak. The only notable weapon was the tactical nuke, but they couldn't be used in all situation safely, such as inside a starship. A tactical nuke would kill everyone inside the ship.

Zheng observed the corner of the corridor and the similar corridor behind. He said to the veteran. "Can your armor defend against the assault rifles?"

The veteran nodded. "Yes. However, it isn't effective against sniper rifles. Two to three shots in the same place will penetrate it."

Zheng smiled. "Leave this corridor to me. Help me get two sets of armors."

# Chapter 18-2

This armor was also a product of the federation, a high tech equipment designed to be suitable for wars. In other words, it was garbage. The armor's defense was minuscular. Even the standard assault rifles could shoot it into a beehive in no time. So its effectiveness in the military was close to zero. In contrast to the backward military tech, civil tech had great growth. For example, this armor looked bulky but was actually quite light. It could also shrink to the wearer's size, living up to being a sci-fi item.

Zheng held two armors in front of him. He was using them as shields. Tatata. Impact sounds hit the armor as soon as he stepped out from the intersection. This corridor was about twenty meters long. Ten troopers were shooting at him from the other side.

Zheng didn't actually need to be scared of high tech weapons with such power. The dragonshard could take a tactical nuke so the bullets were a piece of cake. However, he had his difficulties. He was fighting in front of the troopers so he couldn't use his Tiger's Soul nor the dragonshard. If people mistook the dragonshard as the bugs' defensive ability, there was no way he could talk it through.

The reason he took two armors was to use one to block his upper body and the other to block his lower body. His eyes defocused then he charged in. Twenty meters were almost a blink of an eye. His running speed was too fast, even when he was holding back. Though it wasn't unacceptable. He charged over to the troopers. The nearest one felt a pain on his head then fainted before he could react. Zheng kicked him on the chin and knocked him three meters back.

The rest of the troopers were shocked for a moment. Zheng threw those two broken armors at them. Four troopers immediately dodged to the side. Zheng took a few steps forward and kicked one on the chest which sent the trooper flying and hit several people. He then gave an elbow to another trooper's neck. The trooper fell to the floor without uttering a sound.

These troopers were harmless considering Zheng's current physical ability, especially when it came to close combat. The troopers and sergeants were easily knocked down. Normal people basically couldn't damage him a bit.

Zheng didn't kill them since there were a lot of troopers watching from behind. If his means were too brutal, especially when the targets were the troopers, people would have negative ideas and doubts. Their situation didn't allow him to make the troopers doubt him in any way.

The central conference room came to his view on the other end of the corridor before long. What confused him was the troopers lying on the floor outside the door. Their uniforms denoted that they were part of the backups that just came, troopers who were supposed to be protecting this room. He couldn't tell if they were still alive.

The door opened. A muscular middle age man pushed the door and walked out. He looked at Zheng and the hundred troopers behind then muttered. "Now that things have come to this, there's no more point to worry about them. Is your name Zheng Zha? The leader of team China? I passed by you on the other starship, so we have met once. Nothing needs to be said. Come on in. I know you are here to catch our members who are in this starship. Oh, and I unlocked the first stage. You can obtain a lot of points and reward if you kill me." He laughed out loud and turned back into the conference room.

Zheng frowned as he looked at the door. He turned around to say to the troopers. "Everyone spread to suppress troopers who won't put down their weapons. We must guarantee the safety of this conference room. Two squads stay and protect this place. I will go in to take a look at the generals. No one is allowed to enter without my order to avoid provoking the parasitized humans and make them kill the generals."

The troopers nodded. They were certain these people were parasitized when they saw the troopers lying on the floor. Two squads led by veterans stayed and the rest left quietly. Zheng took a look around then entered the conference room.

There were also troopers lying on the floor inside the room, including sergeants, lieutenants, news reporters, starship staffs, and even generals. The only two people alive were the muscular middle age man and a Caucasian from team Africa.

The Caucasian showed an insane smile as he pointed to the generals. “Hehe. You don’t know that each colonel rank officer is worth 300 points right? A general is worth 1000 points. It felt so great when I was killing them. That’s over 5000 points here. Haha. Aren’t your team so strong? I earned all the points. What is there left for you? Haha.”

Zheng and the middle age man both frowned. Neither expressed anything else. The middle age man nodded to Zheng and said. “Hello, team China’s leader. My name is Richard Robias, the strongest person in team Africa. I want to make a trade with your team.”

Zheng was surprised. “Trade? What kind of trade? I don’t think your team can conduct any trades with us at this point. You have done the extremes by killing these generals. Things are going to become more complicated. Furthermore, it shouldn’t be your team earning those points. I don’t think there’s a need for trades.”

Richard sighed. The Caucasian yelled. “F\*ck! So what if I killed them? What can you do? Come and kill me? It was you that forced me into such desperate situation. And that retarded Neos! Genius criminal? He’s just a retarded kid. If I make it out a live and see him, I will kill him with my own hands...” Before he finished talking, Richard slapped him in the face and sent him flying over ten meters. He knocked over several plastic chairs then lay among the broken plastic.

Richard gave Zheng an apologetic smile. “People can only see the faults and shortcomings of other people. They never notice their own mistakes. It was my team’s problem this time. We attempted to kill you because we had the influence advantage. Greed obscured our conscience. Nothing should be said now that we are in this state. Since we wanted to kill you first, it’s reasonable that you want to kill us. It’s just that aside from Rose’s couple, there’s a little girl in our team that’s innocent. She has a pitiful background. Both her parents had AIDS. They sold her to

prostitution when she was little. She also obtained AIDS as a young age. She was on the brink of death when she accidentally entered this realm.”

“This little girl is innocent. We made all the decisions to kill you and to fight. Greed was also our fault. I only beg that you can let the little girl go. I can give my life to you. I can take care of this man for you if you want, so that you can kill him without any effort. Can you accept my request?”

The Caucasian slowly got up from the floor and laughed with insanity. “F\*ck. Don’t the two of you think you can bully me at will. I am also one who unlocked the first stage and acknowledge by God as the team leader.”

Zheng frowned as he heard their conversation. Richard thought he was not going to accept the request and sighed. “I owe Neos a favor when he was still alive. I created a powerful ability, Berserker. It doesn’t last long but I think I can give you a fight. If you think you can kill the two of us easily, then try it!”

# Chapter 18-3

A thought suddenly struck Zheng's mind. He created his own abilities, two of them. He wondered if this man created a similarly powerful ability or one even stronger?

“You will see after a fight. You also said that there was no need to say much. When your team attacked us with the intention to wipe us, the word mercy was thrown out of this battle. Imagine that if we were the ones who lost, would you spare the innocent people in our team? Everyone who entered this realm has their stories. No one is completely innocent. Can you say that this girl never participated in our battle?” Zheng stared at the man and said calmly.

“Since you attempted to obtain a lucrative reward, you have to bear risks of similar level. You failed right now so don't wish for unfair mercy. Defeat me and use me to threaten the others in my team. It can protect your team. Or you can accept your fate of failure.”

Richard hadn't shown a response. The Caucasian screamed and charged at Zheng. His physical stats were about three to five times that of normal people. As he approached Zheng, he gradually calmed down. His eyes defocused and he entered the unlocked mode completely when he was ten meters away. Electricity and the sound of thunder enveloped his hands at the same time, sending off a shocking aura.

Zheng's gaze felt cold as he watched the man move closer. He suddenly pulled out Tiger's Soul from his ring. Such an attention drawing weapon made Richard and the Caucasian's hearts skipped a beat. They heard Neos's analysis on the weapons available in God's dimension. The magical weapons were especially powerful, which this sword looks like from every direction. The Caucasian felt terrified before he even attacked. Fortunately, he was still in the unlocked mode. He jumped backward at once and dodged the slash by a hair.

His face was turning paler by the second and he asked in a rush. “What is this weapon? My sense of danger tells me if I get close to it...”

He heard the sound of flesh and bone separating. He watched in a daze as his arm was slashed off with a clean cut. The slash also cut two inches into the bottom of his chest, almost injuring his lungs.

The man grabbed his arm and screamed in pain. "Why? I didn't get hit! Is this a weapon that controls the wind like how I control electricity? Fuck. Richard, you won't live for much longer if I die. We need to attack together!"

Richard was watching Zheng's movements closely the whole time. He said. "It wasn't wind. He channeled energy into the sword just then. It was an invisible energy. Hawfor! Drain the flagship's energy. We won't have a chance if you don't do it now. He's horrifying. His strength way surpasses the both of us combined. We can't afford to consider too much. Let us give it one last fight!"

A double bladed axe appeared in Richard hand. This axe was over twice the size of Tiger's Soul, approaching that of a grown man. It looked like he was holding a man in his hand.

Hawfor covered the wound on his bleeding arm and screamed. "My Goro Goro no Mi hasn't reached the final AA rank yet. I won't be able to turn more energy into electricity no matter how much I drain. And draining more than I can take will make my body explode. Are you trying to kill me? Fuck, my arm hurts."

Richard sighed and didn't say anything. He gave a shout. A golden light emerged from his body and enveloped him. He suddenly looked like a golden statue. The double bladed axe also glowed in gold. As time passed, this light was slowly absorbed into his body. His muscles were wriggling visibly and he started groaning in pain.

Zheng watched with curiosity. He didn't know if this was the self created ability. His Explosion and Destruction had immense after effects but their usage wasn't so painful. Or did the man made a mistake while using his ability?

Hawfor yelled with a sense of being terrified. "Fuck. Don't use Berserker without saying a word! I don't want to die yet. I get it, drain the flagship's

energy right? Team China's leader, just you wait. I will show you the terror of the Goro Goro no Mi. Hahaha." He laughed out as he charged toward the exit of the room.

Zheng watched Hawfor ran out of the room quietly. His attention was focused on Richard. As Richard's muscle stopped wriggling, a peculiar pressure formed between him and Zheng. This prevented Zheng from attacking the Caucasian. He was staying cautious and was prepared to use Explosion at any moment.

Richard raised his head to look at Zheng again. What Zheng saw was a pair of bloody eyes. The only emotion left in those eyes was an insane thirst for blood. Richard's conscious and self restrain were completely gone. He kicked the floor to jump forward. It created a small pit on the alloy floor. Zheng could feel the trembling from the floor. The ten meters of distance in between them was closed in an instant. The axe was hacking down at him realized it.

(Can't back! This speed is almost on par with my speed in Explosion. His strength even surpasses it. Isn't this a mutation to Explosion?)

This thought flashed across his mind then he raised Tiger's Soul at the double bladed axe.

Zheng thought to himself that the axe was probably a magical item but the sharpness from the light blade should cut it in half. However, the result wasn't what he had expected. Richard's movements seemed crazy but it wasn't actually so. His movements were much more acute. He rotated the axe slightly right before the two weapons came in contact. The axe hit the side of Tiger's Soul, pushing it off path. Then it slid along the blade of Tiger's Soul into Zheng's arm and cut a long opening.

Zheng had entered the second stage. He saw Richard waving the axe toward his head after the cut and jumped up. He gave a kick at Richard's chest before the axe hit him and sent Richard back several meters. He also used the momentum to back off, increasing the distance between them.

A stream of blood gushed out from his chest. Tiger's Soul was pushed to

the side just then but the light blade still cut an opening on Richard's chest. It didn't cut him in two but it damaged his organs. There should be a large cut on his lungs.

Richard didn't even take a look at the wound. It seemed like he didn't even feel it. He raised the axe and charged at Zheng again. His speed and strength became stronger with the injury and loss of blood. Zheng could keep up with his previous speed in the unlocked mode but the speed now surpassed him. He only had the chance hold Tiger's Soul in front to block the axe. A hit from the axe knocked him into the wall. Richard continued hacking at him before he could act. Dozens of hits in just a few seconds. The force broke the alloy wall and blasted Zheng through.

Zheng was still holding Tiger's Soul but the webbing between his thumb and index finger cracked. The axe also had ice attribute. A thick layer of ice formed on the cut on his arm and inhibited his flexibility. Tiger's Soul was also covered with ice from the impact.

Seeing that Richard charged at him again, Zheng gave a shout and activated Explosion.

# Chapter 19-1

When the fight between Zheng and the two strongest members of team Africa were going on in the flagship, Xuan, Zero, and Lan took the shuttle to the starship team Africa was originally in. Messages of soldiers dying in massive numbers were sent out from the ship. Cause of death unknown. The large part of the starship was classified as restricted zones.

Xuan said to the other two. “Eighty percent chance due to magical items or abilities because scientific weapons will likely damage themselves first. Even if they have defensive items, what about Gando? We still haven’t received notification of his death, so he should be alive in this starship. Lan?”

Lan seemed her mind was somewhere else. She was using the psyche scan ability. After Xuan’s shout, Lan was confused for a moment then said. “Yes. A place within this ship is masked.”

Xuan shook his head. “Zero, have we been notified of killing their members yet?”

Zero shook his head. “No, only the destruction of two starships.”

“Is that so? That means Zheng really wants to save Gando.” Xuan frowned and adjusted his glasses.

Lan and Zero made an eye contact. Lan asked “What do you mean? Why does the lack of notification mean he really wants to save Gando? It shouldn’t be strange that he wants to do so.”

Xuan said. “If the other team quickly received notification of member deaths, once, twice, three times, what would those who are still alive think? They could only run and feel despair. We won’t allow them to surrender. And they know it. The most likely thing they will do is kill the hostage. That hostage is likely Gando.”

“Of course, Zheng has been through so many battles. He’s a qualified warrior. He knows what’s important. When he learned of the person with a self created ability, he might want to observe it. Lan, keep Kampa,

WangXia, and Zheng connected. Contact them immediately if something happens. Zero, protect Lan and give me fire support. I am the main force of this fight.”

Zero and Lan nodded. They looked out the window of the shuttle. Eight starships were battling each other far away. The stray missiles hit the ships nearby. More and more starships were forced to join this chaotic battle. Since the high ranking officers were killed by Hawfor and Xuan disappeared from his position, the commanding system of the fleet was in a disorder. Both sides believed they were right but the lack of a conclusion ignited gun fights even within the starships.

When Xuan entered the starship, the majority of troopers were in a panic state. Most shuttles and transporting ships were used to get away, with many more troopers waiting by the shuttles area. Once Xuan’s group got off the shuttle, a dozen troopers swarmed up. Everyone wanted to get in first that they didn’t even take a look at the three who just got off.

Xuan and Zero knocked them away without mercy. The rest of the troopers immediately raised their guns instinctively. When the veterans recognized the three of them, they yelled at the newcomers then saluted at Xuan.

“What happened? Have you forgotten you are a trooper? All squad leaders and sergeants listen. Shoot on spot anyone who doesn’t follow orders. Now, you tell me what happened here.” Xuan said these words then pointed at a sergeant.

The sergeant was obviously one of the veterans from Klendathu. He gave a salutation and said. “Sir. A lot of large bees appeared inside the ship, about two to three times larger than normal bees. Troopers that get stung would feel hot then faint. Multiple stings at the same time would kill them with poison. Our weapons have no effect on these bees. The high ranking officers in this ship are parasitized by bugs given these strange bees.”

“Bees?” Xuan and the other two frowned. They recognized what these bees represent, a magic ability. Furthermore, this was a large AOE ability.

Its ranking should be rather high.

Lan finally saw the light and said. “No wonder. I saw tiny amounts of psyche force flying around during the scan. I thought their psyche force user was trying to misdirect me. So those are the bees. The bees don’t seem to have a physical body, so they are formed by the ability. Psyche force bees? Truly marvelous.”

“If they are formed by psyche force,” Xuan said calmly. “Try to attack them with psyche whip. If I remember correctly, psyche whip specializes against other psyche force users.”

Lan nodded. She closed his eyes and walked forward. Xuan said to the sergeant. “Guard this area and send some troopers to search for survivors within the ship, but don’t get close to the center where the bees are. We will take care of them.” Xuan followed Lan to the center of the ship.

Psyche whip was extremely effective against these bees of two thumbs big. They were formed by pure psyche force and looked translucent during their attacks. The numbers were huge. They wouldn’t have been able to get near the center area to team Africa without psyche whip.

As they were heading forward, Lan frowned and said to Xuan. “Their psyche force user contacted me. They said they want to get in contact with someone who can make decisions. But Zheng is still fighting. I am afraid of disturbing him. Let me connect her mind with yours.”

Xuan snapped his fingers and said to Zero. “Kill anyone who attempts to come close before our negotiation is over, including troopers. Lan, tell Kampa and WangXia to command their starships to aim at this ship, but not at any critical spots. I will determine the time of fire.”

Lan and Kampa nodded. Xuan closed his eyes to meet the other mind. It was a young woman’s voice. “Hello, are you a member of high position in team China? I am a member of team Africa. The person in charge in our team is dead. Our leader is fighting with your leader. So I will be the one conducting this negotiation.”

“Negotiation? What a joke.” Xuan said with a sneer. “Don’t kid me, unless you consider surrender a negotiation. Don’t act like you have the

upper hand with a hostage. We don't have rune word stones but our score is at positive one point. One or two deaths won't matter much. Do you want to test the truth of my words?"

The girl didn't get angered by his words but sighed instead. "I think you are right. Yes, we lost. This is a surrender instead of negotiation. We are willing to surrender but I want you to understand that we aren't powerless. It's just that..."

"The person who can gather your powers together is dead." Xuan interrupted her. "You said the person in charge is dead. Your leader is still fighting. We only killed one person in the beginning. Which means no other people from your team died in our hands since the battle. There should be someone who make plans for your team. Is he dead?"

She sighed. "Yes. He's dead. Otherwise, his wisdom can lead us on. Even if we are to die, we won't give you such an easy victory. Do you accept our request? We hand you back the hostage, one unlocked member and one not unlocked as reparation. You will let the rest of us go in exchange. We will take care of these two members do you don't have to worry about any schemes..."

"Impossible!" Xuan said with a cold smile. "I will repeat this once more. Don't kid me. I won't worry about the hostage getting killed. I don't even care about the points and rewards from the few of you. Do you think I will accept any threats?" He contacted Kampa and WangXia through Soul Link. Ten seconds later, the whole starship was trembling violently.

"This is your last warning. Surrender unconditionally within five minutes or we will destroy this ship along with you and the hostage. I am not joking." Xuan adjusted his glasses and said apathetically.

## Chapter 19-2

A short period of pause from the girl, then she said with anger, “What do you mean by that? That’s pushing too far. Do you think I have no other abilities aside from the bees? Do you think we have no members with strong abilities? Even though I admitted you are the strongest team but don’t you think you can kill us all! Even if you do kill all of us, it won’t be without costs!”

Xuan said apathetically, “No need for coming out intact nor do we wish to get that little amount of points and rewards from you. We just need to get rid of the danger. Have you forgotten there’s another still weaker team? We will obtain the points and rewards from them. Four minutes thirty seconds left. Make your choice.”

The girl replied fiercely, “Are you really going to drive us into desperation? Do you want us to kill your comrade? Are 2000 and perhaps even more points not important to you? If so I will kill this person right now.”

Xuan gave a cold smile and was about to reply when Zero stepped in front of him. This not so emotional man said as he stared at Xuan, “Xuan, let Gando live. There’s no benefit to you for killing him. I think Zheng also wishes to save Gando. What you are doing is pushing him toward death. Let him go. I have an understanding of what happened before. This isn’t fair to him.”

Xuan looked back at Zero quietly. The sniper was usually a man of few words but he said so much for Gando. The fact was Xuan couldn’t ignore Zero’s words just like he couldn’t ignore Zheng. He gave a nod then said through his mind. “How many people do you have by your side? Are the sacrificial pieces within these people? What are your abilities? How are they in combat? Answer me or I will leave this starship in four minutes. The responsibility doesn’t lie within me by that time.” The last sentence was directed at Zero.

The girl paused for a while then muttered, “There are two people beside

me. Three people here including me. Two on the flagship fighting your leader. One died in one of the information network starships. We can hand one of us here to you. My abilities are witchcraft. I can convert psyche force into bees to attack. Psyche force users are hard counters to these bees. Aside from this, I can sacrifice myself to curse one person. I don't think this person can make it back to God's dimension. Finally, we have our psyche force user. So we don't possess much offensive abilities. As long as you can let us go, I am not an idiot and won't use the curse that easily."

Xuan nodded, "We will leave this for later. Now tell me, how did the person you captured told you about our team members' names and locations? What day did he say these? How did he say these? What did you ask him?"

The girl paused for a bit then told him about how they interrogated Gando and tempted him after capturing. Then said it wasn't until this morning that Gando released the names of all team China's members aside from the psyche force user. And Neos's questioning and his answers. She said these in a rush so the details were missing but the general events were there.

"Is that so? Interesting. Something interesting actually happened. He exceeded my expectation." Xuan adjusted his glasses, "Good. I consent to your surrender. There are two points you have to take note of. One, we will protect your psyche force user. We will kill your psyche force user if you do anything that harms team China. Two, the rest of your team must join us in the battle against team South America. Your chances of living might also be low at that time. Give me an answer."

She was silent for two minutes before replying with defeated tone, "Fine. I agree to your requests. But I want to ask how will you guarantee our safety? Killing us yields a large amount of points and rewards. Can you so easily let go of this temptation? Unless you give us a way to live, we would rather fight until the last moment."

Xuan nodded, "This isn't a problem. We will leave this starship once you agreed to surrender. The two people that we are going to kill and one

more person from the flagship will come to this starship. I will give you twenty-four hours to release Gando. Your psyche force user will also come out with him. If twenty-four hour passes, I will order all the starships to fire. So don't attempt to run or resist. To let you know the truth, you are in a hopeless situation. You may be able to drag one of us to hell but you can also take the risk and trust me in order to give team Africa a chance to live on. It's your choice."

The conversation with Xuan had exhausted her physically and mentally. She looked toward the little girl by her side and a black man lying on the ground unconscious. Then to Gando who was sitting on the side casually but was actually extremely anxious within. She muttered to the girl, "Snow. I am sorry. I have to do this. Rose told me about The Mummy. As long as the main members of our team can live, as long as we can live until we enter The Mummy, we will be able to revive Neos. Forgive me, Snow. I can't let him die here!"

Snow smiled and held her hand, "Aya, don't worry. I also don't want Neos to die. I will be obedient and won't resist."

Aya held her in the arms and cried. Gando let out a deep sigh of relief. He immediately relaxed himself and slid onto the floor.

Xuan, Zero and Lan backed from the way they came. Zero suddenly asked, "Xuan, tell me the whole event. I still don't understand it. I know you planned to kill Gando but why did you let him go in the end? Was it because he didn't reveal all of our names? This isn't like you."

Xuan said calmly, "I did indeed plan to kill him. He doubted the team's orders in Klendathu. As an uncertainty in the team, he possesses more danger than usefulness. I can't accept this point, so killing him was a good choice. It was decided to use him as the bait since the formation of the plan. In my initial estimate, he had a 50% chance of dying during these days. But he didn't die. This was my first test, that whether he is scared of death enough to reveal us. If he did, they would have certainly killed him. It's such troublesome to avoid letting Zheng know I want to kill him, at least not until his death. Otherwise, there's a 90% chance of him stopping the plan. Gando also had his use as a bait to confuse the

other team's strategist."

"The plan proceeded smoothly. He saw the hieroglyphs I put up. It was a gamble with only 50% chance but Gando was lucky enough. My second test is on his ability. If the other team had a strategist who made such a plan, he would definitely suspect the reason Gando revealed everyone's names except the psyche force user so painlessly. How should Gando have reacted? Tell him about the hieroglyphs? Lie? Or betray us?"

"This is a trap that I set. It didn't matter that they know the hieroglyph message when things had already got to that point. They could only continue on with their plan unless they plan to make peace with us. The real goal was to test Gando, whether he could survive, how he survives, and whether his value surpasses the uncertainty he brings. Zheng said that Gando has an extremely strong desire to live. This is similar to him. Then let me see this desire, whether this desire can outshine the most dangerous situation. If he succeeds, I can set up scenarios to give him a sense of belonging to the team. A person with great potential is worth me making these plans."

"Based on my tests and the information I have, he has the desire to live, strong ability and intelligence, and enough luck. He passed my test. He's now a member of team China."

# Chapter 19-3

In contrast to the negotiation happening between Xuan and team Africa, the fight was still going on in the flagship. Both sides used their self-created abilities. Their combat prowess went from normal humans to super humans.

The appearance of the mithril rings changed Zheng's Explosion dramatically. The time limit was extended by a lot and he could save part of his energies to use Destruction in emergencies. As soon as he found out that the enemy's self-created ability was similar to his Explosion, he used his own.

Side effects and after effects aside, Berserker was obviously a near flawless ability in terms of its strength. Richard's physical stats were several times lower than Zheng but the ability pushed his combat power to slightly above Zheng in Explosion. Richard had entered the second stage of the unlocked mode. Not only strength and speed but his reaction and instinctive techniques were on par with Zheng's second stage.

Zheng's eyes were defocused as he slashed at Richard with Tiger's Soul. This was his only advantage in the current situation. His weapon was much better. The light blade created from channeling Qi in Tiger's Soul almost got Richard but he dodged it by a hair each time. However, the power of the light blade couldn't be dodged so simply. After several times, wounds had accumulated on his body. Half his palm and two fingers were cut off. Drops of blood splattered all over the floor.

What confused Zheng was Richard seemed to be getting stronger the more he got wounded. His strength and speed were growing with the injuries. His movements were extremely agile and refined. He left several wounds on Zheng's body with the double bladed axe. In under a minute of fighting, both their bodies were covered in wounds.

Zheng circulated his blood energy for a second. The ice clinging to his body and Tiger's Soul melted. He then leaped forward and slashed horizontally at Richard. The light blade extended to almost ten meters.

The corridor would be cut open along with Richard's body if it hits. The light blade's power was unstoppable after all.

They fought out of the conference room. Their strengths and speed during their abilities were so massive that they broke several alloy walls in just ten seconds. They fought to the middle of the corridor and deformed the path on the way. Their foot prints were embedded all over the floor.

Richard was decisive when he saw the slash coming. He hacked the axe into the wall then used it as support to flip himself over right before the light blade hit. As soon as he dodged the attack, he stepped heavily and charged forward. He raised his axe and aimed at Zheng's head.

Zheng was also slightly losing his mind at this point. He pulled Tiger's Soul back to black axe. Clank! They both got knocked back ten meters and hit the walls. Both coughed out a mouthful of blood. Richard got back up faster as if he wasn't hurt. His hands held on the edge of the pit to get out. He gave a shout, used the wall behind to leap at Zheng.

Zheng still remembered Xuan's advice that his strength surpassed the rest of the team too much, that he should try to capture the enemies alive if possible. This was why he held back in the fight. Another reason was that he worried about Gando. If team Africa were notified of too many deaths, the remaining members might panic. There was no guarantee of anything so he tried not to kill the enemies.

These thoughts crossed his mind in an instant. He saw Richard closing in. He had no choice but to block with Tiger's Soul. When the sword met the axe, he gave a kick at the side of Tiger's Soul. The force of impact and his kick knocked Richard back several meters. He wouldn't let go of such a great opportunity. He activated his movement technique and charged up to Richard before he could turn the axe around.

Zheng was much more adept at with punches and kicks than big weapons. He used a large variety of weapons before he exchanged Tiger's Soul and he mostly used his fists. When Richard threw a punch at him, he went at it with his own punch. But he didn't use much force. As the

two fists were going to collide, Zheng's other arm moved up from beneath. He changed his fist to a claw and grabbed Richard's arm. The elbow of his other arm hit a joint on Richards arm.

Joints were always the weakest part no matter how strong one's body was. Explosion also increased his strength several folds, so this elbow snapped Richard arm in the opposite direction. But before Zheng could follow up, Richard's knee struck his chest and sent him back several meters.

Both sides were injured in this exchange. Zheng's injury was much lighter in comparison. The injury on the joint had disabled Richard's arm. Zheng just needed to be careful from now on. The fight was basically decided. Richard couldn't last ten more seconds.

Before Zheng's next attack, he saw Richard gave a shout. He grabbed his arm and twisted it back to its normal position with force. The abnormal twist and bulging on the muscles were signs that the muscles were injured in addition to the bones. Richard continued to act as though he was wounded despite the pain that would have knocked out any normal person. He breathed more intensely. The redness in his eyes grew to a deeper color. His strength and speed also increased further.

Zheng rolled to the side and dodged an axe. The axe struck a one-meter pit on the floor at where he was standing. Richard's strength had completely surpassed his with the wounds. His breathing was getting heavier and heavier. Blood slowly flowed out from his eyes and nose. Zheng finally decided to use Destruction. Richard was going to become a dead man in any second. Zheng wanted to test his luck to see if he could knock Richard out. If would capture Ricard if he succeeds or kill him if he fails instead of not getting anything.

“Then...”

A man enveloped in electricity came out from the corner laughing before Zheng could activate Destruction. His hair was spiked up and he left a burned trail on the floor that he walked past. He seemed like an incarnation of lightning.

The Caucasian laughed out. “Team China’s leader, I...”

“Fuck off!” Zheng couldn’t afford to waste any time. He raised Tiger’s Soul and slashed across. Hawfor’s legs separated from his body before he knew it and he fell to the floor. A fist landed on his face before he could utter a sound. He was knocked out at once.

Zheng turned around to see an axe hacking across. He immediately rolled to the side and without hesitation, his blood energy and Qi collided violently.

“Destruction!”

# Chapter 20-1

“That’s basically it. I used Destruction and fortunately didn’t kill him. Though the flagship was completely ruined.” Zheng said in front of a group and said.

Among this group were the other six members of team China and five members from team Africa. A Caucasian and a black man were in terrible shapes. The Caucasian lay on the floor without any limbs. The black man’s body was covered in numerous bumps.

There was another person submerged in liquid behind them. The middle age man looked equally terrible. There were cuts all over his body. It seemed as though he just came out from a slaughter house.

Zheng was in a much better shape in contrast. He was also wounded all over when he met with the others and there were ice forming over his wounds. But before long, the wounds began to regenerate. Such a strong body surprised and terrified the two members of team Africa who were still conscious.

Xuan told Zheng his decision when they met. Zheng had no objection to it since team Africa’s strength was more important than some points and rewards at this point. He couldn’t accept it if any member dies during the battle against team South America because of his greed. None of them had another chance to revive. It was simply that.

That was why they immediately gave Richard treatment. The Caucasian and black man were excluded. Then everyone sat down quietly and began to discuss the upcoming attack from the bugs.

During the fight within the fleet, Kampa and WangXia took their opportunities and destroyed three starships. This gave everyone in team China 3000 points. The starships also scanned a large quantity of unknown objects closing in the fleet from three directions. Their numbers were at least five times the number of starships. They hadn’t begun their attack but the numbers along were scary enough. The chaotic fight quickly stopped and the starships moved into a formation around the

flagship.

Xuan adjusted his glasses and said calmly. “We will leave the events concerning the flagship for later. The core of this starship wasn’t damaged too much. Now team Africa, you had surrendered. Following our agreement, we will kill these two people and she will stay within our protection. The two of you must listen to our arrangements until the end of the movie. Any objections?”

Aya shook her head. “No problem. We will follow your arrangements. How are you going to deal with the space bugs? Our powers have minimal effect in a space battle. Any explosion can wipe us out. Do you have the confidence for such a battle?”

Xuan replied calmly. “You don’t have to worry about this. Have you seen the map of the distribution of the bugs? Why do they surround three directions and leaving one open? Because they are giving us a hope of escaping. The bugs aren’t going to win against the massive metallic weapons that are starships with merely five times the numbers. They have to use other methods. The best one is to make us feel defeated without fighting. When there’s a hope of escaping, people wouldn’t be as inclined to fight. What’s interesting is the opening they left leads to Planet P.”

Zheng was recovering his Qi during this time so he didn’t see the distribution map and other information. He asked. “What does that mean? You want to say that the bugs want to force us to land on Planet P and swarm us? We aren’t idiots. Why would we land the starships and face the sea of bugs?”

Xuan waved his hand. “This is where they are smart. I am certain there’s a large number of space bugs waiting outside Planet P. Once we head their way, the space bugs would surround the fleet. The fleet would then be caught in a difficult fight. The destruction of starships means death while landing isn’t necessarily so. How would you choose? Based on current information, there isn’t a sea of bugs on Planet P. In fact, the federation has several fortresses on the planet. Do you still feel it’s better to land or stay in space?”

Zheng picked up the photos of the space bugs. They were centipede like, twenty meters long, no legs, and had a crystalized exoskeleton. It was such evolution that enabled them to adapt to the terrible environment of space. Their bulky bodies and thick crystalized exoskeletons meant that they must move extremely slow on ground with the effect of gravity. They were probably only suited for space.

Aside from the these centipede bugs was a massive ball of flesh in the back. Its size almost approached that of a small satellite. Its exoskeleton was also crystalized, giving it a bronze color. There were also tubes extended out from its exoskeleton. The photos showed plasma coming out from the tubes. The plasma was what gave it the force to move.

“These bugs are frightening. They can evolve to such a state with just their bodies. Is God showing us through this movie the two extremes of evolution of the body and intelligence?” Gando moved over to Zheng and looked at the photos. Then he laughed out.

Gando returned to his cheerful personality after he was rescued. He didn't mention a word about his capture as if that experience was merely a joke.

Xuan nodded. “Quite possible. These space bugs have completely abandoned technology. They displayed evolution of the body. The structure of their society is similar to that of bees and ants. A single mind holds command and the others form the parts of the body. The fact is, humans are fighting against the same organism. We can call this organism as a super life. The bugs' evolution has way surpassed the human's technological evolution in this era. This may be a hint from God of what's more important between the body and technology.”

Aya sighed as she watched. She was convinced of Xuan's intelligence. This was the strategist that defeated Neos. She thought over the battle of wits afterward and with the addition of some details within Xuan's words, she finally knew that Neos's lost wasn't unwarranted. Team China stayed calmed in the team battle. Neos lost in the beginning. He wanted to annihilate team China because he had to challenge the incongruity of his team at the same time. While team China functioned in unity around

Zheng with Xuan as support and the other members were forces in combat. Such a team was much stronger than team Africa.

Zheng and Xuan came to a conclusion. It was not possible to destroy the massive ball with the fleet. They also couldn't participate in a space battle. In the end, they decided to let the fleet head toward Planet P. They had to contact the federation and the fortresses on the planet in order to obtain the necessary support as soon as they land.

“The fact is we still have big advantages after landing. One, the space bugs wouldn't be able to move freely under gravity. So the starships don't have to worry about their attacks. The starships are basically metallic fortresses. As long as we don't get separated after landing, we can enter a formation that allows the starships to support each other. There are also tens of thousands of troopers we can command. Nothing worth worrying about in this battle. The only thing is the true mission that God is going to reveal soon. Judging from the time it takes to head to Planet P then land, we will still need to stay there for twenty-four to forty-eight hours. God is definitely going to announce a mission to make us encounter team South America. Are you ready?” Xuan looked at Zheng.

Zheng nodded and stood up. “Then let's order the fleet to start heading toward Planet P. If we come to become enemies, it probably shouldn't matter much to annihilate team South America.”

# Chapter 20-2

Whether or not they could annihilate team South America was still in question. However, the space bugs surrounding the fleet increased in numbers once again that same afternoon. An endless supply of space bugs kept coming out from the massive ball of flesh. These bugs also propel themselves with plasma from their butts. Their shape gave them decent speed and flexibility. The lack of any legs made them seem like earthworms floating in space.

People on the fleet started feeling anxious with the increase in space bugs. There was still a big gap between the two parties but this gap wasn't actually too far in space. Space battles were different in that an individual's power was insignificant aside from his strategic contributions. Everyone had to place their fate on an uncertain future, which would give them a powerless feeling.

The highest ranking officers remaining within the fleet were Zheng and his other three teammates since the massacre by team Africa. Of course, even though Zheng was the one in command, it was Xuan who gave the actual orders. He was the only one with the ability to manage the situation and coordinate the fleet of about a hundred starships.

"This is actually a chance. I don't know what methods the bugs used to disrupt signal around this area. After the initial signal of riot and ambush, our signals haven't been able to go back to Earth. This fleet is our weapon now." Xuan gave a cold smile with a hint of fanaticism which sent chills to everyone.

"Wait. Wait!" Zheng immediately said. "You wouldn't be planning something scary? No. I won't allow you risk everyone's live. I admit your intelligence and scheming ability are strong but you seem to never leave yourself with a way to retreat. It was taking crazy risks every time. Same thing happened in the battle against team Africa. If we lost, we would have been wiped or controlled. And winning did the same to their team. I don't like this gambler style!"

Xuan didn't get mad. He replied calmly. "If the rate of success goes above 50%, it wouldn't be a gamble. Nothing is absolutely safe in this world or insurance companies wouldn't have existed. As long as profit and the rate of success are maximized, it will be worth doing."

Zheng sighed. "I understand what you mean. Reaching for the highest profit while minimizing the risk and risk equals reward. I understand but you want to attack that ball of flesh with the fleet. This idea is simply outrageous. Even if the ball of flesh is a rank S bonus mission, I won't allow you to do it with everyone's safety. Absolutely impossible!"

Zheng unintentionally noticed the bug distribution maps laid out by Xuan's table. There was focus on the distribution around the ball of flesh. Xuan even wrote out the details of the distance between them, the weapons within the fleet, the success rate of the plan, the speed of both sides, and possible formations both sides would use.

Xuan nodded seriously. "Yes. I have calculated it carefully. If we forced an attack on the ball, there's only a 20% chance of success. However, success likely means an A or AA reward. I was careless to not think of this possibility. If Gando has a Freedom or RX-78, he would be a decisive factor in the battle. So God even anticipated space battles and provides the weapons."

The rest of the group looked at each other. Zheng then patted Xuan's shoulder. "I think your plan is more ridiculous than God's arrangements in comparison. I absolutely won't agree to such a plan. Come up with another one immediately."

Xuan adjusted his glasses as he frowned. A few seconds later, he said. "Then we will head toward Planet P before the bugs attack. We still have four days before going back to God's dimension. If my speculation is right, the mission is probably..." He looked toward a map of Planet P that displayed the location of the human fortresses. Ignore the smaller points, there were seven such places that could supply them with 50,000 troopers in total. These seven places were concentrated in one continent and they were not far away from each other. Adding up the troopers in the fleet with those in the large fortresses, they would have over 150,000

troopers.

The fleet followed Xuan's order to head toward Planet P in the end. Ten smaller starships were left behind to delay the bugs. The rest of the fleet moved at full speed.

“This is the model of their team. A charismatic leader who can influence and control the whole team. A strategist who's only responsible for the planning while the leader decides on the general direction. However, the leader does not interfere with the strategist or other members. Richard, do you think this model is much better than the one we had?” Aya said to the man next to her.

Xuan didn't interfere with team Africa since their surrender. The Caucasian and black man were killed by Lan and WangXia. This was the conclusion after a discussion. The most important psyche force user needed more enhancements. The points and ranked reward could exchange for a psyche force ability. The next priority were AOE explosive weapons or ability which they favored WangXia for this.

The killing could be omitted. Aside from killing the two members, they also obtained two rune word stones expectedly. The quest items that could prevent the user from being erased from point deficiency. They received notification as soon as they got their hands on the stones. These stones were all unused and still had three uses left. Zheng kept the stones for safekeeping per their rules. No one displayed any discontent, even Gando.

Aya and Richard saw this scene. Richard sighed. “Yes. A leader like this brings the team together. Even if there were conflicts among the members, team China will fight until the last moment together as long as the leader is there. While our leader was...”

They grinded their teeth as they thought of that Caucasian leader then sighed when they thought of Neos. He was only slightly below Xuan and he died from his own anger. His intolerance and overconfidence were the biggest causes of his loss.

Aya looked at Snow who was in Lan's arms. Lan fed her candies and

they talked and laughed. Aya said. "We have to revive Neos no matter what. He's the only one with the talent to lead team Africa. I also believe he learned a lot after this loss. What do you think, Richard?"

Richard nodded quietly. He stroked his beard. "It's still a question whether we can go back alive. Though it's good to have a goal we can work toward. Ok then. We will make reviving Neos as our goal. Didn't he say he want to take revenge on the person who forced him into this realm? It isn't his style to go out this way. That's it then. Once we get to The Mummy, we will revive Neos."

Both teams had finished their preparations. Ten hours passed. Ten more hours of flight before they reach Planet P, but the bugs had begun their attack. The first targets were the ten small starships in the back. The space bugs' abdomens glowed when their distance was still quite far away. A fluorescent sphere formed inside the abdomens. Several seconds later, they spit out plasma balls about two to three meters in diameter. The plasma balls flew at the small starships.

They had witnessed the power of the plasma balls during the first invasion. The balls were powerful but an obvious weakness was their extremely slow speed. They may damage the fleet in a surprise attack but they were otherwise not a big threat in space. No matter how powerful they were, they still needed to hit to be effective.

The advantage of the smaller starships was their speed. They dodged the five wave of thousands of plasma balls easily. Several starships fired missiles back at a pack of space bugs. The explosions and fireballs burned these bugs to ashes. But the endless number of space bugs spit out their plasma balls again, one shot after another. The ball of flesh also opened up a large tube aimed at the small starships. Tens of thousands of plasma balls shot out from the tube. The staffs in the starships felt that they had nowhere to dodge. And in fact, they didn't have anywhere to dodge. The area was extremely spacious but the fate of these ten small starships had been decided when the plasma balls reached hundreds of thousands.

"Annihilated. All starships covering the retreat had been annihilated

with one volley. No wonder. The scientists couldn't figure out how the bugs pushed meteorites toward Earth. This force is big enough to push the meteorites." Zheng, Xuan, Kampa, WangXia and the remaining high ranking officers discussed their next action in the command center of the flagship. One of the advisor described the situation they were facing.

The space bugs' movement speed exceeded the fleet's speed in the current situation. The bugs' vanguard would reach Planet P at the same time the fleet does. If there really were bugs waiting to block them off, the fleet might come under attack from multiple sides and get devoured by the plasma balls.

"Enlarge the plasma balls then slow down the firing process." Xuan thought for a moment then said to one of the advisors.

The advisor immediately headed over to the control panel. The wall in front of them turned transparent then it displayed the scene of the bugs' attack just then. The advisor controlled the screen to lock onto one of the firing bugs and enlarged at its mouth.

Xuan watched the firing process repeatedly for quite a while. He adjusted his glasses and said. "Not covered with any mucus. Announce the order throughout the fleet, all starships will land on Planet P at the same time. Starships X3 to X7 move toward the bottom of the fleet. Fire missiles at any bugs that come within attack range."

Xuan gave out a series of commands and arranged the position of each starship. Zheng asked with curiosity. "Why are we landing? The bugs will only have to fire with plasma balls from space with this amount. We won't be able to dodge if we are on the ground. Aren't we going to die like this?"

Xuan answered him calmly. "It's not an issue. The plasma balls will quickly disappear through friction in the atmosphere. There's another kind of bug on the ground that spits plasma balls. Those bugs cover the plasma with mucus which is what enables them to use the attack within the atmospheric layer. The temperature of space forbids the use of mucus on plasma balls. Without this mucus, the plasma balls can't enter the

atmosphere. Which means our enemies are only the bugs on the ground and team South America once we land!”

# Chapter 21-1

The fleet finally came near Planet P on the second day after over ten hours of flight. Hundreds of thousands of space bugs surrounded them from all sides. The bugs' attacks weren't strong. They only had plasma balls and their defense was fragile even against thee gattling cannons on the starships. A single starship could take on one, ten, and even a hundred of these bugs at once. Since what use were these powerful plasma balls if they couldn't hit?

Though that was the case in skirmishes. Once the scale of battle grew to the size that they were facing now, the bugs gained obtained an incomparable advantage, their numbers. Perhaps a hundred or a thousand plasma balls would miss, but what if there were hundreds of thousands or even millions? The question at this time wasn't whether they could dodge but whether there would be anything left of them.

Humans looked down on the Arachnids. Everyone aside from a selected few considered them as simply insects with impressive reproductive ability. The military admitted they underestimated the bugs after the first loss on Klendathu, but they only believed it was due to a lack of preparation. Humans still believed the bugs were not a match especially since four heroes turned the battle around. Their offensive powers, numbers, organization and scheming showed that the bugs weren't a low level species. The fact was, the Arachnids were way beyond humans in terms of invasiveness and offensiveness.

“Colonel, we must transmit the images back to Earth. The human race has come to a critical situation. All industries need to produce as we are in a war. One year, no, in just half a year we can have ten thousand starships. If the whole Earth starts producing, we will...” An advisor said to Xuan with passion.

Xuan took a bite from an apple. “Problem one is how many trained staffs are required for ten thousand starships? How many troopers will it take to fill? Can we gather all the people in half a year? Problem two, will the bugs leave us half a year? Once our fleet gets annihilated, the

federation will be exposed to their attacks. The moment we lose our advantage in space, the bugs can attack Earth with meteorites or even transports swarms to the ground. Can humans fight them with just our bodies? Problem three, how are we supposed to transmit these images?"

The advisor had no reply. A lieutenant said. "There are high powered transmitters in each of the fortresses on Planet P. This is a technology that even we have no way of disrupting so the bugs probably can't either. They transmit by using particles instead of electrical signals."

Xuan took another bite. "Correct. That's why we have to land on Planet P. And in order to preserve our forces, all starships will land around the largest fortress, Blizzard. We will establish multiple layers of defense to prepare for the upcoming war after backups come. We have to hold here like a nail on the ground so that the bugs can't ignore us and head toward Earth. We might die with millions or even tens of millions of bugs coming at us. But our names will be written in history. Send the recording of my words to every starship. Tell them that they can either run and get killed by their own people or become a hero and return to Earth. Let them understand the situation and make their own choice."

The advisors and officers saluted at Xuan then one headed toward the panels.

Zheng walked over and asked in a low voice. "When did you learn to incite emotions?"

Xuan replied as a matter of fact. "Didn't you assess me as a person who sides himself with the majority? This is the first step to completing any big task. We have let them know that our fates are tied together. Now we just need to lay out the plans carefully and wait for God's announcement. Three days left."

At noon of the same day, the scouting fleet discovered a second massive ball of flesh floating behind Planet P. It floated on the orbit of Planet P like a satellite. As the fleet came near, tens of thousands of space bugs came out from the ball. Things happened as Xuan had predicted. With the ambush ahead of them and more pursuing the back, their only choice

was to land on Planet P.

The fleet began to descend. All players including team China and team Africa on the fleet received the same notification from God.

“Protect the seven fortresses for three days. For every fortress that is lost, deduct 1000 points from each member. For every fortress protected, reward 1000 points to each member. All members will be erased if all seven fortresses fall.”

Everyone turned to Xuan afterward, including the two from team Africa. The fate of the two teams were tied together so team Africa naturally placed their hopes on Xuan. Even though Zheng had a feeling Xuan was planning something, like squeezing the last bit of use from team Africa then finish them off.

Xuan asked Aya. “Did Marnie and Rose leave before the military higher ups came? And you haven’t received notification of their deaths?”

Aya nodded. “Yes. They told us briefly then left that same day. What’s the problem?”

“No. I just feel that God is devious.” He exhaled. “The initial mission was to survive until time’s up. Logically, we just had to fly a starship into the vast nothingness of space. No one would be able to do anything to us and we will have the highest chance of surviving. But what if God announces this mission only three days before our time is over? There’s probably over a 70% chance of getting erased.”

Everyone felt a chill down their spines as they followed his thoughts. God kept setting up one trap after another for them to step on. The more they try to run, the higher the risk becomes. Fortunately, both teams had their strategists and didn’t make such a low level mistake.

The starship suddenly shook violently. It had begun to enter the atmosphere. They could see the outer layer of the starship turning red from the friction through the monitor screen. Several minutes later, the friction subsided and the yellow and dusty continent came into view.

Xuan looked at the screen then said to an advisor. “Have the troopers

get ready. Each sergeant leads a squad. Assign a lieutenant to every ten squads and a major to every ten lieutenants. Establish defense lines around the fleet. Send the order to every starship. All ships head toward Blizzard fortress.”

The advisor saluted then ran over to the panel. Xuan turned to Aya and Richard. “We are leaving the defense to Blizzard fortress to you two. Richard, you were a soldier right? Lead these troopers in the defense. The fortress is not allowed to fall. Can you do it?”

Richard nodded. “These starships have powerful attacks and we have so many troopers. I have also seen the map of the fortress. Defending for three days should be an easy task. But if we are leading this army, what about you guys? You to be exact.”

Xuan said to Zheng. “The bigger the risk, the higher the reward. You will decide on the upcoming battle. There are two plans. One, we lead an army in the small starships to go around and assist the other fortresses to guarantee the highest reward after three days. Blizzard fortress will be protected to prevent us from getting erased in the worst case scenario. Two, abandon all other fortresses. Use Blizzard fortress to lure the bugs while we hunt for team South America and the brain bug!”

# Chapter 21-2

Human starships could move inside the atmosphere unlike the space bugs. The advanced motor system and streamline design allowed the starships to fly three hundred meters above the ground without any difficulty. However, the radars detected numerous plasma bugs in the distant plain. These bugs shot mucus covered plasma balls that worked inside the atmosphere and could damage the starships.

The pilots reported this possibility back to the flagship where Xuan and several advisors were planning the formations of the army. Such as the distribution of veterans, officers, and necessary heavy firearms. The backup that came from Earth also brought armored vehicles which manufacturers just rushed out. These were experimental versions so there were only a hundred. The vehicles were equipped with only a Gatling cannon. Though the federation at least made some adjustment. Now, the lieutenants of each platoon were fighting for these vehicles.

“That’s expected. The Arachnids aren’t without intelligence. Air space between the outer atmosphere and the ground would become our free reign without their plasma bugs. They won’t simply take the beating without countering. Don’t go bother these plasma bugs. Hurry up and head toward Blizzard fortress.” Xuan replied.

Since the decision to head toward Blizzard fortress had been made, the fleet only had to move at their fastest speed. Over a hundred starships flew across the sky. Those gigantic bodies were astonishing. They were the height of human technology in this era, the biggest reliance against the Arachnid.

Two hours later. The fleet of over a hundred arrived on top of the fortress. It was built with metal and encompassed a huge area. The troopers in the fortress didn’t know of the fleet’s arrival before hand due to the bugs disrupting the signals. When the fleet arrived, several hundred troopers ran over and more coming out from the inside.

“Uh. This is on a plain. The fortress is approximately fifty meters tall

but this height can't defend against the bugs' attacks." Xuan muttered as he observed the area around the fortress.

The advisors next to him all came with the backups. Their chief asked. "But the whole fortress including its groundwork is built using the toughest alloy that exist on Earth. This alloy can withstand tactical nukes. How could they not defend against the bugs?"

Before Xuan answered, Zheng said. "Because the bugs won't break through the alloy from the front. They will pile fifty meters of dead bodies then walk over the fortress. Once they get in close range of us, we have to focus fire on them or get swarmed by the sea of bugs. You can go ask the veterans who survived. Rookie."

The chief of advisors' face turned red but he was convinced and saluted to Zheng then looked down at the fortress with the others.

The final decision was to leave forty-seven starships behind and surround the fortress in multiple layers. The troopers would shoot from the middle deck of the starships. Once the bugs drowned the starships, they would leave through the transports ships on the top floor and move into the next layer. The defense of this fortress would be incredible.

The fleet descended. The advisors led the remaining starships to assist other fortresses. Xuan and several advisors entered Blizzard fortress to use its communication system to contact the federation on Earth. Once all the troopers started following the plan, Xuan finally found the opportunity to talk with Zheng.

"Have you decided?" Xuan had a red apple in his hand. He walked over to Zheng who was leaning on the wall and smoking.

Zheng frowned slightly. "Can't you eat something else? It's always red apples every time I see you."

Xuan also frowned and pondered for a moment. "Tomatoes next time then. The color looks pretty good also. Back to our topic. What do you think of my suggestions? One safe choice and one risky choice and they determine what you should do and what you want to do in the future. Tell me. What is your choice?"

Zheng took a puff and smiled bitterly. “The choice of my future? What choice in the future? We might have been wiped if it wasn’t for your wits in this movie. Give me an advice. What does the choice determine the future?”

Xuan said. “With the safe choice we will defend in these three days. Since God gave a time limit of three days, there will definitely be a large amount of bugs, perhaps even more than what we encountered in Klendathu. However, with our defense plan and your Explosion and Destruction to kill the powerful bugs like the tanker bug, these three days shouldn’t be difficult. It will allow us to live through this movie safely and protect your dear team members. We have a 70% chance of going back without casualty.”

Zheng was silent for a moment. “And the second choice?”

“We must stay here for two days and two nights. In the last twelve hours, we will strike out and annihilate team South America. There’s also a chance of killing or capturing the brain bug. In summary, the second choice is filled with danger. There’s also a chance of getting wiped. Uh, aside from you. However, the second choice is also filled with points and rewards. If we can make it through, your wish of reviving team members and closing the gap from team Devil are possible.”

Zheng closed his eyes and pondered quietly. The faces of previous team members flashed across his mind. Everyone died in that battle against team Devil. He was the only one who survived. He had recovered part of team China’s strength by now and began reviving the members. He suddenly felt lost.

“Make your choice. Either everyone returns to the real world safely in the future or walk a road of hardships, lead the team to grow strong, death to those who get eliminated, and the remaining fight with you in the revenge against team Devil.”

Zheng threw the cigarette butt onto the ground and stepped on it. “I have decided on the second road. We have gotten this far already. There’s no going back to the safe road. Even if we can be safe this time, the future

is likely going to present new dangers. Tell me the details of your plan.”

“Oh?” Xuan asked with a slight surprise. “I am curious. I think your personality will make you take the first choice. Why? Aren’t you aware that the second choice will put us all in danger?”

“Because of the feeling of impotence.” Zheng leaned on the wall and watched the troopers transporting weapons and ammunition. He muttered. “Ever since entering this realm, I have felt a feeling of impotence many times. Struggling to survive against the monsters. No power to choose the next movie. Inability to save my comrades. And I could hardly protect the one I love. It wasn’t until I met my clone that he told me with his past what true helplessness feels like. He must be weeping blood from within. I felt as though I can hear his inner cries to ‘kill him’. Even though I didn’t experience that event but just imagining it and being unable to do anything, I don’t ever want it to happen! And as my comrades, you need to grow strong with me until we can protect ourselves and the people around us. We have to obtain this power! You said that the greater the danger, the higher the reward. It’s the time we head straight for this danger!”

Xuan took a bite off the apple and said. “Understood. Then leave everything to me.”

The Arachnid’s attack began before dusk of the same day.

# Chapter 22-1

Since they had decided to ambush team South America and maybe even the brain bug depending on the circumstance, all members in team China must conserve their stamina, especially Zheng. He also had to conserve both energies so that he could contribute as much as possible in the fight.

That was why despite the shedding of blood on the outer layer of the defense, despite the endless number of bugs appearing at the horizon of the plain, despite reports after reports of losses, and despite the notifications of the fortresses falling to the bugs, no one in the team did anything. Xuan was the only one giving orders to the troopers outside Blizzard fortress. Against Xuan's capability, the bugs only chewed their way through a dozen or so starships in the first day and night. There were over two dozen starships and a fortress left. Three days should be a cake.

Time was ticking near. Everyone checked their weapons and equipment. It was less than twenty hours left so they weren't worried about the troopers seeing their weapons. Tiger's Soul, the EMP rifle, and the comedic bear robot appeared with them. Though Gando was about to kill himself as he sat in the robot.

Kampa wiped the gun barrel with a piece of cloth. The silver white sci-fi weapon attracted the attention of the troopers. Many had their eyes fixed on the rifle and some were dripping saliva. The troopers didn't disturb them due to the difference in military rank. Zheng's Tiger's Soul also attracted a group of people. Even though close range weapons were ineffective in the modern battlefield, its crimson crystal and the spine within were simply too flashy. The men stared with envy. In contrast to the men, female troopers surrounded the bear robot. The nurses came over and touched the robot's eyes. Gando took offense and cried in Fumoffu.

The little girl from team Africa also stood within this group. The others from team Africa wanted to have her stay in the fortress but Xuan refused by saying they needed the assistance and they didn't trust team Africa.

She was obedient though and didn't express any dissatisfaction. She consoled her team then sat with team China.

The clock gradually approached twelve, which meant there were only twelve hours before returning to God's dimension. This was the time for team China to strike out!

When Zheng chose his path, Xuan told him the details of the plan. He couldn't help but admire Xuan's ability. Xuan was already planning these during the battle against team Africa.

Zheng exhaled then stood up. He gripped the blade in his hand and said. "Lan, any psyche force users scanning us?"

Lan shook her head. "No. Haven't detected any psyche scans. However, there seemed to be a masked area on the hill to the south east. They didn't scan us so I can't be certain."

Snow also said. "Yes. She's right. There's a feeling of masking from that direction. It isn't obvious. Maybe their psyche force user is much weaker than us so we can't sense it well."

Zheng nodded. "Hm. There's this possibility since they were the weakest team here. Their psyche force user might not be strong. That's it then. Lan, mask our team. Snow, mask Aya and Richard. Let's go!"

This was Xuan's plan to distort the other team's senses. Due to the three-way battle in this movie, team South America might assume that the battle between team China and team Africa had been settled. So they could get confused when two masked areas appear at the same time. Not every team could have a strategist. This was just a guess but the possibility was high. It didn't matter whether or not team South America fall into this trap but they would definitely hesitate. This was also the reason Xuan agreed to the surrender. The lives of the three people from team Africa could become their pieces in the battle and net them seven people or more from team South America.

"It's simple. I can't think of a way to deceit them since both teams have a psyche force user. Both teams can detect the whereabouts of the other team. You can mask but the masked location is still there. Lures are

much better. As soon as they assume we are the weaker group, they would attack us or think the fortress is empty and attack it. Either choice is advantageous to us. We just have to grasp the chance and ambush them. If we are lucky, there's a big bonus mission waiting for us."

The eight people came out from the base. Troopers outside were working nonstop. They were shooting and transporting ammunition. When Zheng took out the two Sky Sticks, troopers around looked at him. They watched as team China assembled the baskets then climbed into them. Before the troopers got to ask, the Sky Sticks lifted off and flew out of the fortress.

Smoke filled the outside. Starships weren't infantries. They were killing machines with powerful heavy firearms that had no problem killing bugs. Two days of nonstop fighting had covered the ground outside with bug corpses. Over a million bugs died under that firepower, including many blaster bugs and tanker bugs. It also showed the terror that was the number of the bugs. Countless octopus shaped transporter bugs descended from outer space. Lots and lots also came up from the ground, warrior bugs, hoppers, blaster bugs, tanker bugs, and plasma bugs. The plasma bugs fired as soon as they came close to the starships. They were more destructive than tanker bugs and became the priority target of the starships.

Zheng watched over the bug sea then said to Lan. "Scan the distribution of the bugs nearby. See if all the bugs have moved over to this fortress. And connect me to Xuan."

Lan nodded. She closed her eyes for the scan. A while later, she said. "Yes. The underground was filled with bugs coming this way. There are also more coming in the distance. Several thousand hoppers are flying over from north west. I am afraid we are the target."

Zheng shook his head. "Don't worry. Their target is the fortress. Xuan spent so much effort on the plan to get the bugs to send their main force here. We wouldn't be able to attack team South America and the brain bug otherwise. What now, Xuan?"

Xuan replied through soul link. “Proceed as planned since things have gotten to this point. Based on our experience from Klendathu, the brain bug won’t change its plan because of team South America. We would have died there if it did. Now that the brain bug has begun its attack, we should be safe from now until we reach it. Take as many points as we can in the meanwhile!”

Zheng nodded then shouted to Kampa and WangXia. “Attack! See the endless bugs down there? All of those are points!”

Kampa, WangXia, and Zero had been holding out for long enough. They were waiting for this time that they can attack. For the whole movie, it was either that they couldn’t use their weapons or a battle of wits. Such fights were nowhere near as enjoyable. As soon as Zheng said those words, the EMP rifle roared. Then WangXia threw a plasma bomb into the sea and wiped out a 100 cubic meter area. Zero triggered the Gauss sniper rifle and blasted off the head of a blaster bug.

Team China was really strong! Zheng thought to himself as he held onto Tiger’s Soul.

# Chapter 22-2

The group flew north according to the plan. Both psyche force users detected the masked area from that direction so even though they only had speculations, they decided to check the area first. It would give team South America an opportunity to attack by leaving the fortress even if things didn't proceed as planned.

"I have been pondering a question, how strong is team South America? If we are judging them by team Africa's strength, they are not even worth mentioning." Xuan's voice appeared in everyone's minds. Lan wouldn't be able to do this on her own but the additional Soul Link from the second psyche force user connected the whole team.

Kampa asked. "Why? Team Africa is quite strong. We would have been wiped if it wasn't for you. Wiped without having chance to resist. To be honest, I still don't get what you guys did. We were parasitized by bugs for a moment then they became the ones parasitized. And how did we get to control the fleet after that? What did you do?"

Xuan adjusted his glasses. "It's difficult to explain to your intelligence. The reason team Africa can do this is because they have a mortal's intelligence limit."

"A mortal's intelligence limit?" Everyone asked, including Zheng and Lan. They were curious.

"Yes. A mortal's wisdom is too easy to speculate. It's not worth discussing. However, this person had reached the limit of what a mortal can achieve. So I call him the mortal's intelligence limit. Team Africa is much much worse than us. If they didn't have a person with the intelligence and one with the strength, the Caucasian with a self-created ability, we could have annihilated them in three minutes without question. They have conflicts within the team and they were weak." Xuan muttered.

Zheng nodded in agreement. "Yes. Our team is strong. This is something I just realized. Zero's sniping ability and calmness are

powerful capacities that other teams can't replace. Kampa can kill a team several kilometers away by himself if they don't have the defensive items or skills. WangXia's demolition and scouting talents and Lan's psyche force abilities are what a team needs the most. Gando's potential is as high as mine. You are currently the weakest member but you can become equally strong when you mature."

Gando said. "You said all about us. What about you and Xuan?"

Xuan replied. "My position in the team is its brain. Zheng is the heart. Each of us have our responsibilities. Based on my information on team China, there are several yet to be revived members with strong potentials. Team China is strong, very strong. Can you believe it? We will be stronger than team Devil and team Celestial!" There was a hint of fanaticism in his tone.

Zheng exhaled. "That wasn't a complete explanation but we are indeed strong. So what are you trying to say?"

Xuan calmed down a bit. "What I mean is since team Africa is already so much weaker than us, how weak will team South America be since they are even weaker than team Africa? Can it be that they are so weak that they don't even have the courage to leave the bug swarm? If that's the case, will they come out to ambush us or the fortress? This is the only flaw in my plan. The plan is pointless if they are too weak."

Everyone was dumbfounded. They Sky Stick continued flying ahead. The terrain turned from plains to hills. The amount of bugs on the ground was decreasing until they turned spotty. The ground looked almost clean aside from the occasional bug crawling through.

"It isn't possible for the Arachnids to have an unlimited supply of bugs, just like humans. If we arm five and even ten billion people go all out against the bugs, assuming the battle happens on a plain, I think the bugs are the ones to lose. However, humans can't act so crazy. Even troopers are afraid of death. 50 million soldiers in a ten billion population is a scary number already. The Arachnids are different. Every one of them will follow any order given by the brain bug. That's why they are a sea of

bugs even if they only have one billion while humans have a ten billion population.” Xuan said.

Zheng asked. “And? Does that mean the bugs have sent all their forces to attack the fortress? Can we take the chance to attack the brain bug?”

Xuan waved his head. “No. What I want to say is...”

A silver light shot toward them. Its speed wasn't extremely fast. There were at least three people who saw the light. But it appeared so suddenly that no one had the time to shout anything. Furthermore, they were on the Sky Stick. One had to be in the unlocked mode to dodge the attack. They were merely having a conversation so no one was in the unlocked mode. The light hit the Sky Stick then with a dull thud, Xuan, Kampa, and Zero fell off.

“No!” Zheng shouted. “Hold tight!”

He activated the modified ability of the Sky Stick. A small stream of plasma burst out from its back then it headed toward the ground in accelerated speed. Zheng entered the second stage, focusing his attention to his limit. The Sky Stick went down faster than the three people's falling speed. It caught Kampa first then Zheng headed for Xuan.

Xuan also entered the unlocked mode when he fell. He didn't want for Zheng to grab him and instead reached for the basket when the Sky Stick flew by. It was like Zheng knew that was what Xuan would do. He flew pass Xuan then went for Zero. He grabbed Zero's arm when they were just twenty meters away from the ground, then the Sky Stick flew straight ahead. Its speed was so fast that Zheng could barely hold himself against the wind. He had to squint his eyes to see ahead.

A few seconds later, Zheng stopped the Sky Stick. Eight people and a bear robot were more than it can handle at such speed.

At least seven people let out a sigh of relief. Xuan immediately yelled as he stepped on the ground. “Lan! Their location! Where!”

Lan paused for a moment then closed her eyes. Several seconds later, she shook her head. “Can't find their location. Was it really from team

South America?”

“Fuck!” Xuan cursed uncharacteristically. He turned to Snow and yelled. “And you? Found their location?”

Snow shook her head timidly. “Did-didn’t find their location. There really isn’t team South America nearby. But a lot of bugs are coming at us.”

Seeing that Xuan was looking enraged, Zheng patted his shoulder. “Calm down, Xuan! This isn’t like you. What happened? We were attacked but I didn’t see the silver light clearly. It may not be from team South America. Maybe it was from a new type of bugs. Don’t panic!”

The ground trembled. A spot two kilometers away bulged out. A large blaster bug climbed out then followed by a large number of warrior bugs. They headed straight for the group.

Xuan shook his head. “My speculation was wrong. Maybe team South America isn’t weak. No, they are weak as a team but their individuals are strong. Contradicting? No. They just have to raise the newbies like slaves. Use the points from the newbies to grow themselves. One or two people can grow strong while God considers the team weak! This may be the type of team they are!”

# Chapter 23-1

Zheng instantly felt a wave of heat rushed into his head. The conversation he had with his clone in Resident Evil emerged.

“They told me that you need the mentality of a devil to be part of the team. They seized my ring, told me to exchange an enhancement or item for the core members after every movie. I was fine with it if that was the only thing, but...”

His eyes gradually turned cold. He said without much emotion. “You mean they are keeping the newbies as slaves, make them become a source of points and rewards, and kill them at will? The newbies lived in the most tragic situation without dignity and even... the ability to protect the beloved ones?”

Xuan looked out to the hill far ahead. He showed no worry about the bugs closing in on them. He said calmly. “Correct. That’s what I meant.”

Zheng took several deep breaths and said with a cold smile. “Then it piques my interest. I really want to see if these strong individuals of team South Africa got copied into team Devil...”

Everyone nearby felt a chill coming from Zheng. It was a sense of pressure coming from within. As Zheng grew stronger, he developed his aura. It was different from his clone’s but it was the same aura that belonged to the strong, an aura that came developed from confidence and strength.

Kampa, WangXia, and Zero met eyes with each other. Kampa aimed the EMP rifle at the bugs in the distance. As he pulled the trigger, Zero also aimed his rifle at the blaster bug. Bang! A hole opened from its chest and through its back. At the same time, the EMP rifle shredded several bugs at the frontline.

Zheng watched the bugs dying one after another. He muttered. “Judging by the power of our weapons, we don’t have to worry as long as we don’t get surrounded by large amount of hoppers. The question is, where is team South America? What is the composition of their team? Is there

really one or two super strong individuals?”

“Their psyche force user is at least stronger than ours.” Xuan said calmly. “First of all, they found us who were being masked while we couldn’t detect them closing in. you can assume the silver light came from a quest item but the psyche force can’t be faked. Enter the hole underground! We are heading downward!”

Zheng entered the unlocked mode and simulated Honglu when he had the killing intent. He twisted his hair and said. “Understood. Go underground. We don’t want to go where the enemies wish us to go. Since they shot us down, they must wish us to enter these hills. The large number of bugs is probably also an attempt to force us forward. It seems like their strengths lie on open area and hiding among hills. They don’t want us to go underground. Lan, search out for where a large number of bugs are staying in place. Snow, mask everyone and scan the nearby area. Don’t have to be too far, we just need to get 10km within us under monitor. Can you do it?”

Snow nodded. She put the image of the a 10km area into Zheng’s mind. Now that they had decided to go through the underground, WangXia didn’t preserve his explosives. He threw a plasma bomb over. Gando killed off the scattered bugs nearby then they ran over to the hole.

Bugs were still coming out from this hole. Zheng stopped WangXia from throwing another bomb then jumped in with his sword. He was in his optimal state from several days of resting. There was no need for Explosion or Destruction. Ten times a normal person’s physical stats were enough to clear these bugs without much effort. He killed his way into the underground.

On the other side of the hills. Four people stood there quietly. Two brown skin people cowered behind two Caucasian men. One of the Caucasian carried a large metallic silver bow. The other only held a cigar.

The man with the bow sighed. “They entered the underground. They are good to think of this method to avoid my snipes. Roste, I can’t help you with close combat.”

Roste tapped off the cigar ashes and gave a cold smile. “No problem. Didn’t expect team China to have eight people. Their strengths look quite even, all sci-fi weapon users. Finish them off in the underground. Same old rule. Four each. Eight people here. The pigs can get 10k more points. Fuck. What’s the point of a single exchange each time? You can’t get all their points this way.”

The man with the bow didn’t say anything. He connected to Roste through Soul Link. “It’s the same. Get each pig to exchange an item then kill them. So as to avoid them enhancing themselves with the extra points and cause troubles in key moments. Are you really going to revive the woman that just joined in this movie? Why even bother playing her more than once?”

Roste sounded slightly discontented. “Nick, don’t forget the rules. Neither of us should affect the other. I just fucking like to see the struggles on people’s faces. Who are you to control me? Stop with the rubbish and note their location then find a suitable place to kill them. Oh, and send the information to the brain bug. Let’s see how it sends bugs to block off these hypocrites.”

Nick nodded then asked. “No problem. I am just curious. They only had seven people the last time I checked. We even exposed our location for them to attack back then. Why do they have eight here? Did they hide one in the starships?”

Roste took a puff of cigar and slapped him on the shoulder. “Don’t bother with the thinking. Isn’t it better to kill one more? They are points. Haha. I can get enough for the AA ability after this movie, Illusion Materialization. My power at that point will be...”

At the same time. Zheng’s group killed their way into the tunnel underground. The bugs couldn’t use their advantage in this narrow area, though it also limited the effectiveness of their sci-fi weapons. But they pushed the bugs back easily with Zheng in front. They were fifty meters in before long.

Snow said to Zheng. “There are a lot of flying bugs coming from behind,

at least several thousands of them. The tunnel ahead is also widening up.”

Zheng smiled at her then said to WangXia. “Bomb off the tunnel behind. This tunnel is too wide. We can’t give them the chance to fly!”

WangXia immediately placed a plasma mine in the ground. He paused for a moment then placed two more. After setting the timer, he ran back to the group to help with firing at the bugs in front.

Xuan had already come to the conclusion that the number of bugs weren’t unlimited. Several minutes of killing later, the tunnel ahead opened up. Zheng killed the last warrior bug. Bug corpses covered the whole way they came. Zheng almost couldn’t get accustomed to the feeling of having no bugs to kill.

He asked Lan. “Did you find an area where the bugs are gathering but not moving?”

Lan shook her head. “No. Can’t find any. I can’t even sense the bugs nearby.”

Snow also nodded. “Right. I can’t sense the bugs around us. It’s like they disappeared, probably masked.”

## Chapter 23-2

Zheng fell into a silence. He didn't simulate anyone this time and instead looked at Xuan. The situation required him to conserve as much energy as possible for the upcoming fight which prevented him from using the simulation at will. Furthermore, Xuan was right next to him. He had to make use of this free labor.

Xuan said directly. "The conjecture is established. The opposing team is a powerful one that keeps newbies as captives. I will update my previous conjecture. God determines difficulty based on the strongest individual and the whole team's strength. Though this situation is not so good for us. Strong individuals are not what we wish to encounter."

Kampa asked. "Why? They shouldn't be stronger than Zheng even if their individuals are strong. If Zheng attacks our team, we can kill him with coordination unless he uses Destruction right at the beginning."

Xuan nodded. "Correct. That may be the expectation that a coordinated team with a variety of skills can kill strong individuals. I also know of ways to do it but we can't right now. We are on the disadvantaged side. This is the Arachnid's planet. We can get ambushed and surrounded by large swarms of bugs any moment while they are in their home field. You have seen movies of one special agent killing a squad of regular soldiers in the forest. Fighting in an environment chosen by the strong individual is an absolute disadvantage!"

Zheng paused for a moment. "What do you suggest we do next? Do we just wait here and wait for their attack?"

Xuan adjusted his glasses. "As for this question, I am pondering how many strong individuals they have. One person who's the psyche force user, sniper, and fighter? Someone like this may exist but the probability of him being in team South America is extremely slim. We would have been attacked back in Klendathu if this was true. There were way more bugs in Klendathu than Planet P. If they have two people, this fight will be much easier. But I have to let you know that keep your hopes down.

Aside from you, everyone here, including me, has a 50% chance of dying.”

Another silence from Zheng. After quite a while, he nodded at the group. “I won’t be naive and say I will definitely protect everyone. However, I will give my best. Let’s hope everyone can survive, can fight alongside me until we die.”

“Okay.” Xuan interrupted him. He turned to Lan and Snow then asked. “The situation is dire. I ask and you answer. The first question, you can’t scan anything around can we assume that they have masked us. Their psyche force capacity and abilities surpass yours. Is there a possibility that we are in the center of the location they masked so we can’t scan beyond this area?”

The two girls looked at each other and nodded. Lan said. “It is possible to do what you said, but we don’t feel any traces of being masked in this area. So I don’t know if this is the case. We simply don’t know either.”

Xuan snapped his fingers. “Good. Let’s treat it as a new psyche force ability. This is completely possible. Now, the only thing we have to discuss is can their psyche force user break into our masked area and know what we are saying? I will just assume they can hear us. Lan, all communication at this point will be through Soul Link.”

Lan and snow nodded. Xuan’s voice then appeared in their minds. “Our current situation is we can only scan the open area around us. We have no ability to see the distribution of bugs beyond and therefore the probability of finding the brain bug is almost nonexistent. There are seemingly two ways we can take right now but only one is actually viable. However, this way is also extremely dangerous.”

Zheng brought out a pack of cigarette from his pocket. “What way? Just say it. I have already said I will accept any danger when I decided to fight team South America. You don’t have to hold back.”

Xuan nodded. “It’s both simple and difficult. Normal people will not split up at this situation because the strong individual can defeat the groups one by one. However, running around in the underground together like this isn’t much better off than splitting up. We have to face the

almost endless supply of bugs coming at times we can't predict and the possible snipes and ambushes from team South America. The only thing staying together will accomplish is dragging it through the twelve hours. This does not fit our original goal. Why didn't we just stay in the fortress for that time instead?"

"The second way is to split up in two. One small group of elites and one larger. I suggest Zheng and Zero for the first group. So you have a close combat fighter and a ranged. Your mission is to capture at least one strong individual from the other team then interrogate them on team South America's situation. The best outcome is capturing their psyche force user and remove the masking. That will allow you to find us and the rest of team South America. Don't worry. With teams like this, capturing one strong individual will break apart their team. This kind of teams are both strong and fragile."

"The larger group's goal is to shift their focus to Zheng and Zero. Give them a chance to encounter team South America. The reasoning is simple. They don't know our arrangements. We are not teams that keep newbies as slaves so they will assume our individual strengths are on similar levels, but they will neglect self-created abilities. Our goal is to make them believe they can take on the smaller group with ease. The second goal is to lure the brain bug out."

Zheng was curious and asked. "I can understand the first one but what do you mean by the second goal? Lure the brain bug? Can you do it with just more people?"

Xuan shook his head. "The brain bug is a big bonus mission but more importantly, we are currently in the middle of the bug swarms. There will be more and more bugs surrounding us as time goes by. If we get ambushed by team South America at that point, our defeat will be definite. That's why our mission is to lure the brain bug out and kill it. I think anyone who watched the movie can understand the brain bug eats human brains. Once we get surrounded by a large amount of bugs and let it feel we are not a threat anymore, there's over a 70% chance of it appearing. This is why I said Zheng is the only one not in any significant

danger while the rest of us have a chance of dying. Once we decide on this plan, everyone must be prepared to die. We might die while fighting the bugs. We might die if the brain bug doesn't come out. And if it does come out, we might die to it eating our brains."

Zheng smoked quietly. He looked over each member, from Lan to Gando to Snow. He looked over everyone deeply several times then threw away the cigarette. "That's it then. This may be our last good bye but I am really happy we once fought together, comrades. Do your best to live on. Believe in me. Believe that I will definitely come back to save everyone!"

No one said anything in reply, aside from the bear robot's 'Fumoffu'. They all looked back at Zheng quietly. There was a sense of trust coming through their eyes.

On the other end of the tunnel, the Caucasian with the silver bow said slightly confused. "They stayed there for several minutes then started moving again. But it's strange. They split up in two groups. The larger group continue on the tunnel. The other group only has two people. They are searching for the way up. Roste, what should we do? Which group are we going for?"

Roste took a puff of cigar then laughed. "Naive. The larger group is probably continuing to search for us or the brain bug. The smaller group is heading back to call for backups since they belong to the federation's infantry unit. Whatever, let's go kill those two first. We can kill the larger group one by one later. Haha."

# Chapter 24-1

Zheng was merely a regular white collar previously, at most someone with the potential to survive. This potential only surfaced after he revived the person he loved the dearest. That was also when he lusted to live on. After he was not alone anymore, he bore too much, friends, comrades, the blood of his enemies, the expectation of his love, and the hatred of his clone. It was all these responsibilities that made him the person he was.

“Raising newbies as slaves was no doubt a powerful method to quickly become strong in the beginning stage. If God determines difficulty based on the strongest individual and the average of a team, such team won't encounter movies that are too difficult. So a team can obtain large amount of points and rewards while staying within safety. That's the biggest advantage to this method but it will eventually lead to the team's destruction.”

“It isn't that evil submits to justice. History has long proved the only thing matters in this world is absolute power, so justice and evil are bullshit. You can be fair to some people but never to every single person. Same with being evil. This concept is the weak's self comfort. The underlying reason they will fail is because they only see the surface of God's realm and forget its true purpose.”

“God doesn't get people here to grind points and enhance themselves. If that's the case, its designer could have simply modified its program to give every human the enhancements. When gods and buddhas soar the sky, vampires and devils roam the ground, the end of humanity would not be far away. Its true purpose is to make humans evolve. Raising slaves can give them powerful enhancements but their unlocked levels are certainly low. Secondly, they probably can only use abilities and enhancements from God instead of their own abilities. The probability of this is over 90%. We have experimented that self created abilities can exert 100% of their powers while exchanged abilities and enhancements are determined by your unlocked stage.”

“The final question is every powerful individual has a fatal weakness.

Like sharks are strong in the sea but are mere food for the cats in the mountain. Lions are strong in the plains but gets eaten by fish in the sea. Such a team may seem strong but are weak. Go meet with them, Zheng. Break through their seemingly strong shell and what's left inside is merely rotten flesh. Team Africa is much stronger to be honest!"

Zheng recalled Xuan's words in his mind. He continued heading forward quietly with Zero. He had entered the first stage. As he used the unlocked mode more and more, he could stay within the first stage for a long time. When this time continued accumulating, he might one day be able to stay in it without any restriction. But for now, he had to unlock the genetic constraint to discover the other team.

"Zero, how's it? Can you see the environment here? It's a little too dark." Zheng said to Zero in a low voice.

Zero gripped his Gauss sniper rifle then replied. "I can see it. I only enhanced my eyes after all. I can see up to several thousand meters in darker environments. Though the terrain here isn't suitable for snipes. Oh and there are two Gauss explosive bullets left."

The Gauss explosive bullets were the expensive bullets Zero exchanged before entering this movie. They were of course extremely powerful. One bullet can destroy an area of several hundred meters, more destructive than tactical nukes. Zheng understood what Zero meant by that. When he failed to rival the enemies, Zero would use the bullets. He could escape the area of effect with the speed of his Destruction while the enemies might not.

"Ok, I get it. Thank you for fighting along side me this whole time. I don't want to see you fall in front of me again, comrade. I said it, we will fight together till death!" Zheng nodded.

Zero also nodded. "Fight together till death."

Following Xuan's plan, Zheng and Zero walked the opposite path. They searched for the way up. There weren't many bugs in their path. Zheng easily killed the few bugs he came across on sight, including a blaster bug. The light blade of Tiger's Soul sliced the blaster bug in two without

resistance and they continued.

And so, ten minutes later, they looked at each other as if they sensed something. It was a very blurry feeling but they sensed they were being spied on. Zheng was in the unlocked mode and Zero was a veteran assassin. They were both sensitive to such sensation. They walked toward a more open area in the underground. Large numbers of huge fungus grew in this underground that it looked like a forest. They were walking into this forest.

“Zero, they are about here. I think they can hear my words right now. Live on.” Zheng muttered to Zero. He brought out a pack of cigarette and threw one over.

Zero caught the cigarette. He lit it and inhaled deeply. He nodded then walked under the shadow of the fungus. Zheng was the only person left standing in the open.

Zheng looked around with Tiger’s Soul in his hand. He activated the movement technique and jumped up along a fungus. A few jumps later, he stood on its cap. The spying sensation fell upon him again. He finally saw four people coming out from a tunnel far away. Two Caucasians and two brown skin people. The brown skins looked like they were cowering. There were numerous bruises on their bodies. Their expressions seemed scared. The Caucasians looked at Zheng with arrogance. They laughed out loud when their eyes landed on the sword.

“Is it funny? White pigs. Come kill me if you dare!” Zheng shouted using his qi. The sound was loud enough for them to hear clearly. They stopped laughing but they still acted unconcerned as if they looked down on Zheng.

“Team China? Yellow skin monkeys. I thought the black skin Africans were going to seize the victory. Didn’t expect you monkeys to win.” The man’s voice sounded right by Zheng’s ears.

A silver light crossed the darkness. Zheng immediately jumped up. The light hit the cap of the fungus then it was completely obliterated. It wasn’t burned nor shattered but obliterated into nothingness.

“Don’t hide. I have found your locations. There’s one holding a sci-fi weapon on the other side. Are you hoping to sneak attack on us? Haha. Let me tell you, we have BB defensive items on us, rechargeable all purpose defensive items. Speaking of those, these seemed to be items your ancestors created, called Xiuzhen items. All sci-fi weapons are ineffective against us, same with magical weapons. Your crimson sword won’t be able to hurt us. Just surrender. We still have to chase the other group after killing you. They are being surrounded by bugs. The brain bug is going to get them first if we don’t worry. Those points are ours. Haha”

The Gauss sniper rifle resonated loudly. A bullet shot toward the man with the silver bow at speed invisible to the eyes. A golden light radiated from the man’s body. A golden barrier the shape of a bronze bell covered him. Klank! It was as if the bullet hit a real bell. The man was intact.

(They are a team that raises slaves as expected. They carry the best weapons and defensive items. Their enhancements and stats are probably also extremely high. This man is indeed a powerful individual. Xuan, this seemingly strong shell may be too strong.)

Although these thoughts crossed his mind, his killing intent grew even more intense. The same raising newbie as slaves, the same torturing of newbies, and are both Caucasians. Everything matched what his clone said. These two people may be members who were once in team Devil! If that was the case...

“You must die!”

# Chapter 24-2

Zheng didn't know how strong these two from team South America were. But he knew he and Zero were in the most disadvantaged situation. The opponents had the best enhancements, best weapons, best defensive items, and more importantly, they had the support of a psyche force user. Zheng and Zero were a lone army. They were exposed in their vision. There was no secret in the opponents' eyes no matter where they were at. They could monitor and coordinate.

The environment was also not working to team China's advantage. The underground was filled with bugs. Even though Xuan's group attracted a large amount of bugs and made team South America revealed themselves, this was still the home field of team South America.

The first attack from the Gauss sniper rifle unveiled their powerful BB defensive item. Zheng had seen the power of the rifle. It was not totally unblockable but he wouldn't dare to stand there and take the shots either. The dragonshard was dependent on its energy. Once the energy depleted, it was no more than a piece of rock. It was not a difficult task to deplete the dragonshard's energy with the Gauss sniper rifle.

(Their magical item is different. According to them, it seems to be able to block close range attacks and magical attacks also. I wonder if it can block the light blade. If it is possible, this item is too powerful. No wonder it's a BB item. Is enslaving newbies really so profitable?) Zheng cursed.

He followed their initial plan. They ran into the darkness on two sides separately. They couldn't be certain if team South America would split up and chase but this was the best way to try to separate them.

The two Caucasians was surprised. Roste inhaled deeply on the cigar. He said to Nick. "I will take care of the fighter with the sword. You go get the one with sci-fi weapon. Gather here after five minutes. For every minute any one of us are late, he will give the other 1000 points worth of stats. Ok?"

Nick laughed. "I am in on the bet. But you have advantage with your enhancement. The running alone is going to take me a few minutes so I am not giving you the psyche scan to make it fair. Haha. This is your words, 1000 point of stats for each minute late. I worry you don't have enough points for me."

Roste spit out the cigar end and cursed in a murmur then he sprinted after Zheng like the wind. Nick sneered at Roste's back then turned to the two brown skin people at his back. He frowned and said. "Get the fuck back to the swarms. Fuck, if you get killed by team China, I will revive you and torture you to death. Do you believe that I can make you live ten days before dying?"

The brown skin people quickly nodded. They looked like they were extremely scared. After Nick went after Zero, they immediately ran back to the hole they came from. There was no sense of anger in their expressions. All that was left was fear.

Back to Zheng. He turned around and jumped. The fungus was still twenty meters high after the cap was destroyed. This little height was nothing to him. He jumped off, then lightly stepped on another fungus with the movement technique which lifted him up again. He was running through the forest on the fungi like a bird. However, it was not even two minutes when he heard a hiss coming from behind. He turned around and a stream of wind flew over his shoulder. The wind cut open a big opening on the shoulder of his cloth.

Zheng stopped jumping. He looked behind and the man with cigar was standing on top of a fungus as expected. He didn't even know when the man caught up to him but this man's speed was certainly impressive. He was able to catch up over the gap when Zheng was running with his movement technique and furthermore, he closed in on Zheng without Zheng noticing. The man's speed was faster than Zheng.

Roste didn't not have his cigar this time. He looked over Zheng without any restraint and smiled coldly. "Still not planning to surrender? Do you really want to make me tore you apart? Look at you. That sword is at most a B or BB tier weapon. What a hypocritical weakling. You are probably

the strongest member of team China. Yet you actually risk your life for them. If I am in your position, I will kill or enslave everyone except for one or two trusted subordinates. Haha.”

“Shut up!” Zheng shouted. He couldn’t help but swung his sword at Roste. The light blade reached out ten meters. As he swung the sword, he charged ahead. The light blade crossed upward diagonally through the fungus and Roste’s position.

When the light blade almost touched him, he changed from the cold smile to a slightly serious expression and jumped. He dodged the attack by a hair while the fungus was separated in two.

As Roste landed, Zheng pulled back his sword for another attack. There was no way for Roste to dodge since his body was in mid air. However, Roste swung his hand backward. Clank! Zheng felt his sword trembled. The light blade that was formed from his Qi shattered. This had never happened before. He looked at Roste. Nothing on his hand. How was he able to shatter the light blade? He couldn’t even accomplish that even when he was in Destruction.

“Can you see my weapon? Haha. This is an A tier weapon. It isn’t in its final form but it will become an AA tier weapon in the end, Excalibur! Or you can call it the sword in the stone.” Roste laughed out from the top of the remaining fungus.

Zheng stared at Roste’s empty hand with coldness. He stood on the ground without moving. He could see Roste’s hand was in the shape of holding a weapon. Judging by the size of the grip, it seemed to be a two handed sword. Only such larger weapons could rival his big sword directly. What he never expected was that his light blade was so fragile.

“How strong are you? And your unlocked stage?” Zheng was pondering on what to do next and asked casually.

Roste was surprised for a bit laughed with amusement. “What? You planning to gather your enemy’s data now and kill me? It doesn’t matter anyway. I only need ten seconds to finish you. I can spare the few words with you. I am the leader of team South America, unlocked the second

stage of the genetic constraint. Haha, I can't go back to a world that couldn't enslave newbies. I am in love with this world. Crazy, bloody, massacres, and exposing that nature of those pitiful hypocritical weaklings. Such a wonderful world. Let me tell you some truth. I am not only strong but my potential is recognized by God. I have been cloned into team Devil long ago. Haha. I wonder how my clone's life is in team Devil. Is he enslaving newbies there. I hope he's not much weaker the next time we meet."

Zheng's eyes defocused. He gripped the handle of Tiger's Soul with both his hands and looked at Roste. "That means even if you are not the leader of team Devil, you are one of them. So you are related to that event."

Roste was about to attack when he heard this. He showed an interest. "That event? What event? Hurry up and say what you want before I kill you and take away your chance."

Zheng waved Tiger's Soul. "I have no more to say. I think the weapon of the legendary Chiyou wouldn't be weaker than your sword in the stone. If the light blade isn't enough, I will fight the battle with the clash of swords. You should ask your clone when you get to hell. That's the reason I am killing you!"

"Explosion!"

# Chapter 24-3

Zero chose to head toward areas where the fungi were more densely populated after separating from Zheng. He didn't consider the twists and turns of the roads. Bugs were fortunately little here. He hadn't seen one yet as he followed the road in between the fungi.

Sizz! Zero instinctively rolled forward. A silver light pierced through a fungus and headed toward his location. He was in his mid-roll when the light passed by barely touching him. It continued onward piercing through all the fungi on the way. Zero could hear the collapses of those fungi.

“Stop hiding. You aren't going to make it. Just let me kill you in one shot. That will make you suffer less. If you make me lose this bet, I will burn you inch by inch from toe to head with my Silver Blaze. Make your choice. Either die in an instant or from torture. Tell me, swine!” His voice came from the outside of this area. Another silver light shot through along with his words. However, it missed Zero by a meter this time.

Zero noted this shot. He understood such long distance sniping couldn't be completed solely by psyche scan. The scan gave you the target's location but not being able to see the distance with your eyes would introduce some error. This was why he chose such an environment.

Zero immediately raised his rifle at the direction where the silver light came from and fired. Bang! Was the sound from the Gauss sniper rifle then it was immediately followed by a Dong! The sound of striking a bell with a rock. Both sounds were so out of place in this underground world. Zero instantly continued to run deep into the fungi forest.

Two seconds after he started running, a silver light crossed his previous location just like he had expected. The man roared with rage like when a cat had its tail stepped on. His tolerance was thin and he started firing like a maniac. Several more shots later, he stepped into the ruin he caused and walked to where Zero was. He gave a cold smile. “Fine. I will burn you to nothingness inch by inch!”

Bang! Dong!

Another loud shot. The powerful bullet went straight for Nick. A golden light formed an ancient bell and enveloped him inside. The bullet could only strike the bell ineffectively.

“Are you an idiot? How many times do I have to tell you this is a BB defensive item? Your sci-fi weapon can’t damage me even one bit. It will only expose your location!” He gave a cold laugh then drew his bow and fired at the fungi forest ahead. A circulating light filled the silver bow. The light then concentrated on its string. When he released the string, a silver light fired out.

Yet, this shot was as useless as the previous ones. Zero dodged the light before it hit. Nick grew more enraged and started cursing. The end of five minutes was coming near. Nick was also getting impatient.

“I get it, swine! You forced me to do this! I thought to give you an easy death but it seems like you have to get torn to pieces!” Nick shouted.

He brought out a silver coin from his pocket and put it on the string of the bow. The coin fused with the circulating light as he drew the string. He released the string with a shout. Numerous light beams fired from the bow. The single puddle of silver light from before changed into tiny beams. There were at least ten thousand beams that devoured the fungi in front of him.

Zero was still running. His sense of danger raised to an extreme when Nick changed his shot. Zero glanced behind with his peripheral vision and saw the light beams coming at him. The number of these beams gave him a sense that it was unavoidable. He remained abnormally calm at this critical moment. The beams’ path covered the area around him and the area in front of him. He turned around and ran back without a moment of thought.

The beams were an AOE ability that covered up to a hundred meters. Their only flaw was a decrease in speed. The first beam reached Zero after he took four steps. Time seemingly froze for him. Zero felt the world slowed down. His movements also slowed down. It looked like there was

no way to avoid being hit by the beams.

Less than a meter left. Zero eyes defocused. He had no time to change any movement from the running. His foot kicked on the root of a fungus then he used this force to throw himself forward on the ground. The beams flew over his head and back, almost touching them. He could feel the heat so clearly. Time was slow during this moment. As soon as all the beams flew by, he immediately jumped up.

This was the first time Zero experienced this feeling of near omniscience. Endless information from the surrounding streamed into his head. He could see the condition of his body, his strength, his stamina, his speed, the power of those beams, and even what action he should take next. He immediately brought out a Gauss explosive bullet without hesitation.

Nick was a few hundred meters away from Zero. He was closing in but Zero was safe switching to this bullet. He fired back at where the light beams came from. The same bang as regular bullets. The same sound of striking a bell. Zero got back down on the ground after firing. A heat wave swept over him.

Nick was waiting for the notification from God. However, it never came to his irritation. What came back was a shot from the Gauss sniper rifle. He cursed to himself and thought, did this person from team China also had a defensive item? One high ranked enough to defend against magical weapons?

The bullet that struck the bell didn't drop to the ground this time. It flashed brilliantly instead. Nick heard a loud sound followed by violent vibrations and the wavering of the bell. The bell protected him from damage but the ground couldn't withstand the explosion. He was blasted up dozens of meters into the sky. The heat waves from the explosion then threw him back down into the fungi like a bullet. He was struck several meters into the ground.

Zero immediately ran toward the densely populated fungi forest afterward. He heard about the pain of unlocking the genetic constraint

for the first time. If this shot didn't kill the man, he had to suffer through this pain in a hidden place before continuing the fight, continue until he killed the enemy!

# Chapter 25-1

Zheng's speed was beyond stunning after he activated Explosion. Roste's physical stats were similar or even surpassed his when you included his enhancements and special abilities. However, Explosion pushed Zheng to a degree way above Roste.

Zheng slashed across the fungus Roste was standing on before he could realize the situation. Roste slid down from above. Then Zheng jumped high toward him.

Roste's expression was overtaken by shock. He couldn't imagine such strength coming from Zheng. Both Zheng's strength and speed surpassed him by a wide margin. He wouldn't have believed a team with even power levels across all members can have such a strong individual if he didn't see it for himself. He reacted with quickly by adjusting his sword to slash at Zheng's direction. But Zheng charged up to him before he could swing the sword. Tiger's Soul slashed diagonally upward at his chest.

Dong! The golden bell appeared on Roste. Zheng's sword struck the bell. The sight looked powerful and the bell shook but it didn't break the defense. The slash knocked Zheng back several meters. They were both in midair after all and there was no way to keep their bodies in place.

Zheng didn't wait until he landed. He stepped on a fungus and jumped toward Roste at an even faster speed. That fungus broke into two from his jump. Roste only got to raise his head when he opened his eyes wide in disbelief.

Zheng was already in front of Roste when he just landed on the ground. He kicked Roste's chest before the man got to make an action and sent him flying again. The bell blocked the kick but Zheng immediately pulled him back down and smashed him at the ground.

Roste was not injured but being beaten like this hurt his pride. He was so used to bullying newbies that he thought of himself as god. The beating made him cry out with insanity and he waved his sword around wildly. Yet, the lack of technique, speed, and strength was no match for

Zheng in Explosion and unlocked mode. Tiger's Soul slashed back at him over a hundred times in less than ten seconds. The golden bell was dimming down.

It wasn't Zheng acting arrogant but merely the fact. Roste was no match against his powerful self-created ability.

Roste got kicked up again but he was prepared this time. When Zheng's hand reached for him, he gave a shout then his body split into four pieces. Zheng didn't catch anything. Roste was already dozens of meters away when Zheng laid eyes on him again. There were several copies of him.

"You are strong! Unbelievably strong! I won't believe such a powerful person come from a hypocritical team! Who exactly are you?" Roste stared at Zheng with caution. He wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. The BB item could defend against the attacks but the intense shocks from the impacts still injured him. The injury wasn't big but the hit to his self-esteem was unrecoverable.

Zheng exited Explosion. It consumed Qi and blood energy for every second he was in the state. He wasn't rich enough to maintain this state in a conversation. The several copies of Roste was too unusual that he refrained himself from trying to continue the attacks. He didn't have such a powerful defensive item against the Excalibur.

"I am the leader of team China. What else are you going to ask? Do you think I will let you go?" Zheng gave Roste a cold smile as carefully observed the copies from their weight, shadows, movements, and expressions.

Roste paused for a while then laughed out loud. He then said to Zheng in a serious tone. "My actions were disrespectful then. I only hate the hypocritical weaklings. They are only kind because they don't have the strength to do vicious acts. The strong are different. They can choose the path they like, be it kindness or evil, just like you and me. Haha. Saying I need less than a minute against a strong individual was disrespectful. I also must bring out my full strength." The clones fused into one. Roste's

eyes defocused and his muscles expanded. He entered the second stage of the unlocked mode.

“Are you finished with your last words?” Zheng activated Explosion again and charged at Roste.

Roste put away his arrogance and insanity after entering the unlocked mode. He was slower than Zheng but his abilities could save him. He split up into multiple copies when Zheng slashed at him. Tiger’s Soul only cut across two shadows. The shadows vanished then Zheng felt a pain coming from his back.

Roste slashed Zheng’s back with Excalibur when Zheng made his own attack. Though it only cut an inch in because Zheng was much faster. Zheng stepped forward to dodge the attack then turned his upper body around and swung the sword at Roste. Dong! The bell blocked the slash but the force sent Roste flying backward.

Zheng stopped for a bit to feel the wound. The cut wasn’t deep but it seemed like Excalibur had the property of absorbing or annihilating energy. He lost around 10% of Qi and blood energy from that slash. No wonder it could shatter the light blade from Tiger’s Soul so easily. The light blade was also a form of energy.

Roste stood. He was still in the unlocked mode. This time, he charged at Zheng and shouted. “Team China’s leader! You are strong but that is also evidence of your inability! You have no abilities to make use of such strength. You will lose!”

“Mirage!” Zheng felt Roste’s speed was increasing during the charge. He split into multiple copies when he got near. Zheng had already come up with a method to deal with this ability. He jumped up then he was frozen at one meter above the ground. All the clones of Roste raised their arms and slashed down at Zheng.

“Dimensional slash!” A one-meter area surrounding Zheng began to shatter like glass. The shattering reached his left hand and cut off his finger. A sense of extreme danger struck his mind. He twisted his body madly and entered Destruction. The overwhelming strength that came

along brought him back control of his body. He broke through this area before the shattering reached him and his sword struck toward Roste's head with the strength of Destruction.

# Chapter 25-2

Roste obviously never expected things to go this way. Zheng in Destruction almost couldn't be caught by the eyes. The crescent slash cut across all clones and forced the golden bell to appear. Roste on the other hand seemed like he hadn't reacted. Dong! Tiger's Soul cut an inch into the bell. It looked as though the bell was going to break.

The shattering behind Zheng ended when he landed. He could feel from that sense of danger he would die for certain if he got caught no matter how strong his body was. The only except was if he had the body of the masked vampire.

Roste was sent flying over a hundred meters away. The very first action he took as he dropped to the ground was split up his clones again instead of getting up. He realized that sudden burst of strength was so overwhelming that he had no other way of dealing with it. Fear finally filled his mind.

After Roste split up, Zheng exited Destruction and returned to Explosion. It was his final technique. He would have no strength to continue a fight once he used up all his energy. He decided not to continue with Destruction until he figured out the limit to the defensive item and Roste's other abilities. The cost to using it was too high unless it was the final attack.

"How about this, we can stop the fight. A fight between the strong will only benefit the weaklings. I will give you two, no, three people from my team. One of them is unlocked. He's extremely weak in close combat. You only need less than a minute to finish the fight. Let's end our fight here!" Roste said with panic but he didn't let his guard down. All the clones moved in the same way and showed the same expressions. He looked lacking in confidence.

Zheng didn't reply. He walked forward one step at a time. Yet, each seemingly small step moved him ten meters forward. This pressure forced Roste back dozens of meters. He finally shouted with anger from his

shame. “Fucking. Do you really think you are the only one with a final ability? I have one also! Do you dare to try? I can kill you with this ability! I just don’t want to take the risk. Shouldn’t the strong work together to bully the weaklings?”

“In my eyes,” Zheng said coldly as he took his steps. “You are the weakling!”

Roste roared in madness. He knew peace was not an option from this reply. He didn’t know why Zheng seemed to hate him so much. He just knows that Zheng was much stronger than him. It wasn’t because of equipment or abilities. It was the aura of someone strong. This pressure made him feel terrified. He resorted to insanity to withstand it.

“Ah!” Roste roared. He and his clones charged at Zheng. When Zheng raised Tiger’s Soul, he surrounded Zheng with the clones just like before and used that restraining ability. “Mirage!”

Zheng’s body froze with his arm raising the sword. About a ten-meter area around him was frozen. He could see Roste wasn’t in a good condition either. Blood was leaking from Roste’s lips but he still raised the sword. “Excalibur!”

Light radiated from his hand. The intense brilliance carved the shape of the invisible sword, a two handed medieval sword. He swung the sword at Zheng and released a beam.

“Destruction!” Zheng wouldn’t just wait for death. He activated Destruction. He could use a total of ten seconds in this state, nine seconds left after the first use.

Everyone seemingly froze in Zheng’s sensation. He broke out of the restrained area then took a step forward. The ground collapsed a hole of a meter deep. Zheng jumped up twenty meters high with the force. “Geppo!”

He changed direction midair. The beam had just reached where he was at this time. The ground on its path was scorched into flat surface. Zheng would probably get crushed if he were to take the attack with his body.

Zheng landed behind Roste, who was just raising his head. Zheng knew which one was the real one when Roste used the attack. Though to be safe, he sent several Rankyaku at every Roste. The vacuum blade easily sliced across the clones and was blocked by the bell on the real one. The golden color of the bell dimmed even further. The vacuum blade cut in another inch. Roste seemed to be trying to turn around. Only one second had passed.

“Fist-gun!” Zheng ran up and punched forward. The bell dented in and the punch almost touched Roste’s chest.

He didn’t pause for a moment. Tiger’s Soul slashed wildly and cut inches into the bell every time. Then it finally cut the bell into two from the middle and took an arm along. Roste finally turned his head around. Fear filled his eyes and expression. But Zheng didn’t hold back. A few more slash before Roste could split up again cut off all his limbs. Zheng grabbed Excalibur and put it in the Na ring.

Six seconds passed in Destruction. Zheng exited from the state. The smaller blood vessels immediately busted and covered him in blood. He quickly checked the Qi and blood energy remaining in his body then drained the ring to prevent himself from falling down.

“Damn it. The after effect is too heavy. Feels like I am going to die.” He felt pain and itch all over the body. His recovery rate also showed its effect. The blood vessels and muscle strains began healing. Even then, his condition was only at 30% of his best.

Roste’s speed returned to normal in Zheng’s eyes. He started to yell but all he could do was struggle and roll on the ground without his limbs. He seemed to realize his life was coming to an end so he stopped begging and vented all his pain, anger, and hatred.

Zheng was worried about Zero. He hadn’t received the notification yet but Zero was going against someone with strong enhancements and a BB defensive item. He picked up Roste then ran toward where the sound of gunshot was coming from. He searched Roste’s body as he ran then found a little golden bell. However, the bell cracked in two from the middle like

it was cut by a knife.

“You won’t fucking get anything. This item becomes useless as soon as its defense got broken. I have also made a pact with my Excalibur. No one other than me can use it. Haha, your swine. Beating me with so much effort yet not killing me. Are you planning to hand me to the weaklings that can’t get points? You hypocritical weakling!” Roste cursed.

Zheng didn’t reply and asked. “Where is your storage item? Don’t tell me you don’t have one. I won’t believe it.” He pulled the tendon on Roste’s broken arm. He seemed to hate this man so much.

Roste gave a shout then calmed down. “I have a storage item with a lot of good items, but why should I give you? And why do you hate me so much? Why? I don’t even know you. Even if I challenged you or said something condescending, can’t you let me go in front of interests? Why! Tell me why do you hate me so much!”

# Chapter 25-3

“Hatred? No! This isn’t hatred!” Zheng suddenly shouted. He grabbed Roste over and bit at his half remaining shoulder. Zheng tore off a large piece of flesh from the shoulder, from skin, to muscle, and even a tendon. Such pain was beyond what a person could withstand, especially now that Roste had exited the unlocked mode. He screamed and struggled in insanity.

“Do you get it?” Zheng spit out the flesh. Red painted his mouth and chin. He held Roste up in front of him and stared at him. “This isn’t hatred! Because hatred can not describe the anger I have. Rest assured that I won’t let you die so easily, I promise! You should feel fortunate that I don’t have the ability nor items to capture souls or I would torture you to pieces. Want to die? Keep on dreaming!”

A chillness permeated his whole body. He could hear the hatred from these words. Such hatred was absolutely irreconcilable. Yet he also couldn’t remember when did he ever offended Zheng. If it was due to his enslaving of newbies, Zheng could have just killed him. There was no need for the hatred. Roste shouted. “Fuck! I admit I am unkind but just tell me where did I offend you. You can just kill me. What’s the point of torturing like this? I have prepared myself for the day of ending up in the hands of newbies when I enslaved them. Give me a reason and I will accept my death!”

Zheng stared at him hideously. He was grinding his teeth as he said. “Fine. You want to know? I will let you know! You said you are cloned into team Devil, is this true?”

Roste nodded. “Yes, so what? Do you get offended for someone entering team Devil? That’s outrageous.”

Zheng said coldly. “I was cloned into team Devil. I was still weak when I got cloned and was told a bunch of Caucasians enslaved him. If that was the only thing, I would just take it in. However, they shouldn’t do that to my beloved girl who also got brought over...”

Roste suddenly laughed out. He returned to insanity. “Is that so, is that so. That girl probably got gang banged to death right? Haha. I so want to see your clone’s expression. Weaklings can only remain weaklings in the end. You can’t even protect your own woman. What kind of strong are you? Haha. At least my clone played with your clone’s woman. Come bite me! Haha.”

“I already did.” Zheng smiled coldly. He turned his eyes to the distance and muttered as he ran. “I won’t bite you anymore but I will torture you until you can’t forget this pain even in hell.”

Roste was still laughing. “A hypocritical weakling like you may seem strong right now but you will die when my clone meets you. He will tie you and your team up, do the same thing to all the women. Right. That’s how to treat you weaklings. He will definitely do it!”

Zheng said. “I won’t have to take care of it anymore. My clone had already killed all you Caucasians. He became the leader of team Devil. He will kill anyone that he doesn’t like. Get it now? You can go ask your clone in hell. Ask him the pain he felt at that time and compare it with the pain you will feel in a while!”

Roste paused then started shouting again. Despair finally seemed to settle into him. But Zheng wouldn’t even give him the chance to shout and struggle. He tore off another piece of flesh from Roste’s shoulder. The wound quickly clotted due to his high physical stats. The stats that were so valuable to his survival became the source of his pain. Every time he screamed, Zheng would tear off a piece of flesh. When all the flesh was gone, Zheng began tearing off his bones. The pain was unbearable, yet his stats prevented him from falling unconscious. Roste finally accepted his fate and stopped screaming.

After Zheng approached the fungi forest, Roste couldn’t hold it and asked. “I have a question. How did you know what happened in team Devil? Are you lying to me? Maybe you are just a blood lusting person and you reason yourself as someone kind. Do you think you can deceive me? Haha”

Zheng stared at him and said coldly. “Because I met team Devil. My clone hated me. He killed me and my whole team. Do you think I shouldn’t know this? I fucking know everything. I don’t hate my clone. I hate you Caucasians that enslave the newbies. You are the first such team I encountered. I will definitely tear you to pieces with my wrath!”

Roste paused for quite a while then shouted. “I knew it! I have seen that item, the revival cross. Fuck. I was greedy and didn’t exchange it at the time. I thought with our team’s rating wouldn’t meet anyone strong. This isn’t fair. Why did God let someone your level participate in our team battle? Your team members are not weak and you didn’t enslave newbies like we do. This isn’t fair!”

Zheng said coldly. “There is no fairness in this world. Think of those newbies that you tortured, humiliated and killed. Why don’t you go argue with them about fairness? Think of what your clone did. I won’t kill you before the torture breaks your mind! Haha.”

Zheng threw Roste onto the ground then activated Explosion and sprinted ahead. A Caucasian covered in blood was laughing wildly. He kept firing arrows to his front. Endless silver lights crushed sections and sections of fungi. The arrows were powerful yet they just couldn’t get Zero. He dodged each one by a hair then returned every shot with a snipe. The golden bell was getting dimmer and dimmer by Zero with a sci-fi weapon. This person’s strength was literally garbage.

Zheng in Explosion was so fast that he had already reached Nick when he turned his head around in shock. Then Tiger’s Soul slashed across horizontally at Nick’s head. Dong! The blade cut an inch into the bell. Zheng estimated its energy was about to be depleted. This was indication that Zero’s techniques and intuition way surpassed this man. If he could still consider Roste a strong fighter, Nick was totally useless aside from his special weapon and ability.

Each one of Zheng’s strike contained a crushing force that knocked Nick flying. Several strikes later, the light blade had carved deep into the bell. Though he felt a pity that he couldn’t obtain this BB defensive item.

Zheng didn't hold back since this was a battlefield. He had to use his all his strength to achieve victory. Every little bit of mercy meant another possibility of danger for him and his comrades. As for capturing Nick, he didn't need to overthink it. Capturing was the better option but he would kill him here if that wasn't possible.

Nick also knew someone strong came. He couldn't see Roste anywhere in sight but he was aware that dude's fate was grim. So he started to run for his life without a second thought. Even though he was much slower than Zheng, he still had hope to run away relying on his defensive item.

Bang! Dong! Another loud sound and impact. The Gauss bullet pierced deep into the golden bell this time. It looked like it was about to break.

Zheng saw this opportunity and swung Tiger's Soul. Every hit returned a clank then finally the sword slashed all the way through. The golden bell shattered. Zheng immediately slashed downward and cut Nick's legs off then an uppercut to cut off his remaining limbs.

# Chapter 26

Zero looked bedraggled when Zheng found him. His body was covered in damp and black soil. There were numerous cuts from stones from his rolls and thin trails on his back. If he didn't dodge in time, any of those shots would have killed him.

"You okay?" Zheng helped him up and asked, deeply concerned.

Zero nodded. However, he fell again when he just got his feet on the ground.

Zero smiled bitterly, "Can't do it. My whole body feels sore and exhausted. The after effect of unlocking is scary. I thought I was going to die here."

Zheng stopped for a moment then yelled in surprise, "Unlocking? You unlocked your genetic constraint? That's great! Don't worry, we just have a few more hours left before returning to God's dimension. You can repair your genes there. Just don't enter the unlocked mode again during this time or it might cause your genes to break down. We don't have any way to save you if that happens."

Zero nodded quietly. He stood up using the Gauss sniper rifle as support as though he recovered the strength to fight. But Zheng knew that it would take a long time before he could fight again after unlocking for the first time. That was his experience when he had Qi and blood energy. Zero didn't have any energy within. He helped Zero walked toward the two captures.

All the bugs that would have come should be here already due to the noise. The majority of bugs were lured to Xuan's group. So when Zheng came over to Roste and Nick, they were still lying there like before. They expressed difference reactions. Roste stared at Zheng hideously. It seemed like he wanted to bite off a piece from Zheng. Nick on the other hand was scared especially when he saw Roste in the same state as him.

"I advise you to behave yourselves. To be honest, capturing you isn't rewarding. Both weapons are bounded and your defensive items are

destroyed. I don't mind killing you right now but my team members might need to enhance themselves. So I am handing you to them. Choose for yourselves whether you want to die in an instant or tortured with thousands of cuts!" Zheng said coldly.

Roste replied ferociously, "Fuck you. Why are you still talking so much trash? Come and slash me if you can..."

He watched with fear as Zheng motioned the sword over his body slowly. Roste finally shut up.

Nick immediately nodded, "Please don't kill us. My items are in his storage belt. I can give you support with my psyche force abilities. Right, aren't you looking for your team? They are in huge danger. The brain bug's bodyguards have surrounded them. I don't think they can last much longer. When the brain bug's bodyguards appeared, that means it wants to eat their brains. Do you want to see your team die in such horrible deaths? Spare me. I will take you to the deepest part of the bugs' nest!"

Zheng and Zero met eyes with each other. Zheng nodded. "Okay. I can spare you but you need to lift the mask you placed on them. I have to contact my team first."

Nick nodded. "The mask was lifted when I was fighting this man. But I masked our location so they couldn't find you. Do you need me to connect your minds to your psyche force user?"

Zheng looked at Zero, signaling him to be careful. Then turned back to Nick. Nick immediately closed his eyes. He quickly connected Zheng's mind to Lan.

Zheng asked, "Lan! How's the situation over there? The fight on our side is successful. Where is your location and how are the bugs reacting?"

Lan's mind shook for an instant then she answered, "Are you alright? Look at me being stupid. You contacted me so you are of course fine. Don't worry, we are still good here. Do you want to speak with anyone else?"

Zheng replied, "Yes. Get me connected to Xuan."

The next second, they were connected. “Xuan, my part of the plan succeeded. Both high stat individuals are captured. However, their items are either unusable or in their storage device. I can’t get anything good right now. What is the situation over there?” Zheng asked in a hurry.

Xuan said, “Dangerous. You only have five to ten minutes to come over. Afterward, one person will die every minute. Grasp the time by yourself. Don’t kill those two people if you can. Your priority task is to come over. We encountered a type of black warrior bugs that are extremely difficult to deal with. It would push us a long way into the tunnel before we could kill one. You need to hurry up.”

Zheng gave Xuan a confirmation then held up Nick, “Send a scan of the area and their location to my mind. Zero, can you run while holding the other one?”

Zero nodded. His body was quite fit to begin with and he bathed in dragon blood. He grabbed Roste and followed behind Zheng.

Zheng looked fierce as he carried a limbless man in blood with his left hand and a red crystal sword with his right hand. Dirty blood also stained his body. Someone like this in the real world would be avoided by any person. He killed all the bugs that appeared on his way, every bug with one slash.

The distance between Zheng and the other group was quite far. It would take him three minutes if there were no obstacles like bugs and roads blocked with boulders. Though he simply slashed the boulders then kicked them to pieces. The light blade could cut through the toughest boulders. He took the shortcut this way so that Zero could also make it in five minutes even though he was slower.

Zheng and Zero passed through an entrance. The area brightened up. This was another open plain under the ground. Fungi plants grew all over the plain. The only difference between this plain and the one from before was the numerous warrior bugs and a type of bugs with huge pincers. These bugs charged at Zheng and Zero the moment they appeared. However, the bugs hesitated when they came within twenty meters. This

surprised Zheng and Zero. The bugs then stopped as though they didn't see the two humans.

Zheng and Zero looked at each other with shock and surprise. They carried the two people and ran through this sea of bugs. Not a single one attacked them.

Zheng said to Nick with a cold smile, "Didn't know you are such convenient items. We could have just brought you over to the brain bug and capture it instead of luring it out."

Nick opened his mouth but Roste yelled, "Nick, are you going to die if you say one less word?"

Nick stopped. Zheng and Zero saw the scene then Zero scooped out Roste's eyes. He threw the eyes over to Nick. As Roste was screaming, Nick immediately yelled, "I will say it. We won't get attacked by the bugs but if we get within 300 meters of the brain bug or do anything that might resemble danger to it, they will attack us. We had five newbies in the beginning but we didn't know of this rule so a few of them died. Do you really think we don't want those points?"

Zheng and Zero nodded. They believed his words. Xuan who was still connected the whole time suddenly said, "If that's the case, I have a plan. Zheng, do you see our location? Lan, mark this place, and here. See the marks?"

# Chapter 27-1

Zero was always so indifferent. It was a different kind of indifference from Xuan. His was a combatant instinct, to place himself on the perspective of an observer so that he would not lose himself during snipes and he could fire with the calmest attitude.

He headed to the marked spot in the scan as soon as he received the order from Zheng. He set up his Gauss rifle and aimed it at an entrance to a hole. Just to be safe, he readied his last explosive bullet. Then he just crouched there and waited. Large bugs walked around him but he wasn't moved in the least bit as if these bugs were non-existent. He waited quietly.

Gando came over to Zero, avoiding the bugs carefully. He acted like he would get attacked if he were to simply touch these bugs. In contrast, Nick who was in his arm was screaming. These two cowards being together made it so much effort to walk over to Zero. The bear robot sat on the ground, seemingly didn't want to move again.

"Fumoffu!" The robot spoke.

Zero replied calmly. "What about the psyche force user in your hand? Make him use soul link."

That was when Gando seemed to realize it. The robot spoke to Nick in Fumoffu then their minds were connected.

Gando asked carefully. "I heard you are an assassin. Won't you feel scared? Scared of death, scared of being killed?"

Zero replied without turning his head. "Scared. Everyone gets scared of death. People who have gotten over this fear isn't far away from death. However, compared to death, I am more scared of losing something important."

That piqued Gando's interest. "What things? What important things are you scared of losing?"

"Comrades, future!" Zero said.

“I can understand comrades but what do you mean by future? A lack of future by dying in this realm?”

“No. It’s the excuse you cling onto to stay alive. I don’t want lose this excuse.” Zero crouched there without moving. His thought came through soul link.

“The excuse to stay alive?”

Zheng handed Roste and Nick over then charged into the sea of bugs. He brought out his full strength this time in comparison to the fight in Klendathu. The light blade, use of his full physical stats, and his movement technique. The bugs couldn’t even react when the sword slashed across and shredded dozens into pieces.

Zheng stepped on the pieces of shattered bugs as he moved forward. He entered a narrow hole from the side, crossed several tunnels and made a big round to the back of the brain bug. The plan was to drive the brain bug to where Zero was. The ending of this movie depended on whether Zero could hit his target.

“Lan, mark all the bugs. If you can’t do it, have Snow help you. I need to know the location of all types of bugs. I can’t run into the bodyguards before reaching the brain bug.” Zheng said to Lan and Snow.

The two psyche force users quickly marked all the bugs in the tunnels. Warrior bugs, blaster bugs, and even some hoppers hanging on the ceilings. The bodyguards were also marked. They had black exoskeletons and covered a thousand meter area around the brain bug. Their speed and strength were much higher than normal warrior bugs.

Zheng examined the scan as he ran. Unfortunately, he had to run into at least three groups of bodyguards with each group having three to four bugs. What he worried most wasn’t being injured by these bugs since that was not likely. He was worried these bugs would slow him down. His goal was to drive the brain bug. If the brain bug went into a different path, someone in the group being surrounded by the bugs might die. Zero wouldn’t be of use also, even though he was the safest among the team.

“The bodyguards are covered in this tough exoskeleton aside from their

eyes and joints. However, no matter how tough their exoskeleton is, their joints will bend from being attacked. That is your chance. I think you will cause more damage in Explosion without using your sword.” Xuan said.

“That’s true but how do you think I will feel if I am to tear the bugs apart with my hands when I have a weapon on hand?” Zheng wasn’t so interested in Xuan’s suggestion.

Xuan’s ideas were too logical. Zheng understood that breaking the joints with huge force was more effective than Tiger’s Soul. However, it didn’t feel good to do so when he had such a weapon. Xuan suggested the idea without a care. That was the difference between someone so logical and a normal person.

Zheng complained to himself but he still had to keep going. He quickly moved through several smaller tunnels. The scan showed the group around the brain bug slowed down. It wasn’t a good message since it might mean the brain bug had found out their goal. It was hesitating whether it should continue moving toward team China. Zheng was 10k meters away from the brain bug with three groups of bodyguards in between. Those were the last obstacles.

“Fuck it! There’s no time to hesitate!” Zheng gave a shout and jumped out from the tunnel with his sword.

He slashed horizontally and cut through dozens of warrior bugs that just came up. Then he stepped over their wriggling limbs. The first group of bodyguards appeared in front of him. These three black warrior bugs were a size bigger than the normal ones and they seemed to have some form of intelligence. They stood within the sea of bugs and didn’t run around restlessly.

Zheng jumped forward then dropped straight down from six meters. Tiger’s Soul chopped downward and cut the warrior bugs in front of a bodyguard in half. These warrior bugs didn’t stand a chance against the light blade. But the light blade ignited sparks as it struck the black exoskeleton of the bodyguard just like when two pieces of metal met. The light blade carved an inch into the exoskeleton then stopped. Zheng

landed back on the ground.

“Doesn’t work as I thought. Am I not using enough strength?” Zheng muttered to himself.

Though he was aware this wasn’t the time to ponder because large number of bugs were surrounding him from all sides. There were also buzzing of wings from above. Probably the hoppers. He knew he would be trapped if this continued. So he activated Explosion at once and leaped toward the bodyguards. The rock he stepped on exploded.

The first bodyguard seemed a little dazed from the strike. The other two spread their mini wings and jumped to a height just slightly below Zheng. They were only two meters apart. The pincers swiped next to Zheng’s face. He continued flying forward while the bugs dropped down. The bloody scent that drifted past gave him cold sweats.

# Chapter 27-2

The bodyguard bugs' strength, speed, and leaps were all impressive. Furthermore, they possessed an awareness for combat that normal bugs didn't have. This put Zheng into a passive position. If their speed and reaction were a little faster, the awareness would seem like they were in the unlocked mode.

Zheng leaped over the three bugs then sprinted ahead without stopping. He deactivated Explosion and entered the unlocked mode. Tiger's Soul slashed at the normal bugs in front of him. The sharpness of the light blade sliced these bugs in two as soon as they came into sight. If it wasn't due to the fact that the bugs had no sense of fear, they wouldn't keep coming up to Zheng.

The bodyguard bugs weren't much slower than Zheng. They were charging through and knocking away the normal bugs in their path with their huge bodies. Zheng wasn't simply running after all. He had to deal with the sea of bugs swarming toward him.

The bugs proved they were a race most adapted to combat. Every one aside from the brain bug had no sense of death nor fear. All that was left was their instincts and their forms from millions of years of evolution that even included types adapted to space travel. Zheng exclaimed.

He felt his arm getting sore from the hundreds of swings. The number of bugs he killed were in the thousands. Every area he ran past were left with a whole ground of broken limbs and corpses. No bug lasted more than a moment in front of him, aside from the bodyguard bugs.

The bodyguard bugs were an abnormal type. They didn't exist in the original movies. It was shocking that their black exoskeleton could withstand strikes from the light blade. Furthermore, their awareness in combat seemed like they reached the first unlocked stage. They were the biggest problem Zheng had to deal with.

After Zheng killed his way through for three thousand meters, the second group of bodyguard bugs blocked in front of him. There were four

this time and three more chasing from his behind, only five hundred meters away. They could surround him if he even just stopped for a moment.

Zheng looked up at the sky. A few dozens of hoppers flew down from the ceiling. He normally wouldn't be afraid of hoppers in low numbers but any hinders during his jump would drop him down to get surrounded by the bodyguard bugs. That would force him to use Destruction to escape.

Leaping through wasn't viable this time. The psyche scan showed the brain bug had started heading at the direction of their plan. However, it was moving extremely slow. If Zheng was to drive the brain bug to the plan's designated location, he must run pass the three groups of bodyguard bugs and reach within a thousand meter of the brain bug.

He activated Explosion. The energy stored in his rings and the amount recovered during his running combined to over half the amount in his peak state. So he could use Explosion for short period of time. The environment slowed down at once. He slashed across without a second thought, slicing the normal bugs in front then charged forward. Every step he took crushed the rocks on the ground. He reached the nearest bodyguard bug then thrust the sword toward its eye.

However, being the most powerful force of the bugs, its awareness saved its life. The bug moved its head slightly. The sword hit the exoskeleton to the side of its eye. Clank! The toughness of the exoskeleton exceeded the sharpness of the sword. Unless Zheng had the full version of Tiger's Soul, he wouldn't be able to cut through this toughness.

The bug wasn't injured but the force of the thrust couldn't be negated so easily. It threw the bug back for ten meters and smashed the normal bugs on its path. The other three bodyguard bugs leaped at Zheng.

There were only five meters in between him and the rest of the bodyguard bugs. If he missed again, he had to take the attacks from two bugs. He put the sword back into the ring then grabbed both pincers of the bug nearest him with his bare hands.

The bugs' strength was of course no match for Zheng in Explosion. The pincers contained great force but Zheng pulled them apart as his muscles expanded. He gave a shout and snapped the two pincers before the two other bugs got to him. It was just like Xuan had said. The joints weren't as tough as their exoskeleton in order for the bugs to maintain flexibility.

Zheng put the pincers into his storage bag. He realized this exoskeleton was good material when he heard of its toughness. Not even Gundanium alloy could withstand the light blade of Tiger's Soul. He wouldn't waste the pincers. The other two bugs had closed in on him. However, they were simply slower than Zheng. He easily dodged their bites and attacks. After a bug performed a big movement, he grabbed its head with one arm and thrust the sword into its eye with the other hand. His strength confined the bug from moving its head. Tiger's Soul penetrated into its eye and pulverized its central nervous system.

Zheng threw the whole bug into his bag. He also received notification of 1000 points for killing the bug. Their rewards were high but it was also difficult to kill them. Now that one bodyguard bug was killed, two knocked down on the ground, and one behind him, Zheng sprinted forward. He ran a hundred meters before deactivating Explosion. Six bugs were chasing after him from behind.

Zheng took a deep breath as he glanced over the map from psyche scan. He was very close to the third group of bodyguard bugs. The third group also had four. They guarded a large open area. Far into this open area were the brain bug and a large number of bodyguard bugs. Crossing over this open area and through a tunnel would lead to the place where Zero was at. Yet, maybe the brain bug sensed something or guessed their intention, it stopped before entering the tunnel.

"Fuck. I won't believe a bug can rival Xuan in wits." Zheng cursed.

He saw the swarm of thousands of bodyguard bugs in afar. This swarm could raid all the fortresses and human army in this planet. A four-meter-tall fat bug stood in the middle of the swarm. There were many smaller bugs underneath it. They seemed to be carrying the fat bug.

Behind Zheng were the six bodyguard bugs, a few dozens of hoppers and a thousand warrior bugs. Zheng knew that only the bodyguard bugs could cause him any trouble.

He gave a shout and leaped at the four bugs in front. The hoppers quickly flew over at him and the four bugs were ready to leap. Zheng suddenly stepped on the air again and accelerated. “Geppou!”

## Chapter 27-3

This was an idea Zheng came up with before the movie, an instant Destruction state. Destruction was powerful but so was the burden it put forth. It was best to leave Destruction for when he was certain of winning unless the fight was one of life and death, such as a fight against his clone. However, many situations required him to use Destruction in reality. If he could use it against the bodyguard bugs at will, he could tear them apart at the joints. He wasn't confident at tearing through their exoskeleton with his bare hands even in Destruction.

That was why Zheng came up with the idea of instant Destruction!

Time seemed as though it slowed down once he activated Destruction. One second might feel like several for him, so he could perform many actions in an instant. He could use a Rankyaku or Soru or Geppo when he was in the air to change direction and accelerate. One instant was enough time to use these abilities and wouldn't put a large burden on his body.

Zheng researched the possibility of his idea carefully back in God's dimension. The most difficult obstacle was how to collide his qi and blood energy for just an instant. It would otherwise be a fantasy if he couldn't achieve this.

It was indeed difficult for the human body to collide the qi near its navel and the blood energy in its head. The meridian network wasn't a laser circuit. The energies required time for movement and collision. Furthermore, would they separate so easily afterward? The whole process would take at least one second. His idea was theoretically impossible. The shortest Destruction activation was at least one second.

However, an item made this idea come true, the mithril rings. The rings stored energy and the amount that came out was determined by his mind. The entrance where energy entered his body was at his fingers. When he wore two rings on the same finger, their energies would meet the instant he drew them out. He would move these two energies to his heart while colliding them on the path. Once he used that instant of Destruction, the

energies would be used up. He only had to drain them depending on how much time he needed.

(It's still not perfect. The path going from my finger to my heart hurts so much. It seems like I am injured internally already. Can't use this instant Destruction so much either.)

Instant Destruction allowed him to use abilities that he could only use in Destruction. He flew another fifty meters. What was left in front were the warrior bugs and then the bodyguard bugs further away. The brain bug shifted its body with unease. But the presence of thousands of bodyguard bugs calmed it down.

Zheng was two thousand meters away from the brain bug. Any normal bugs in front of him would get sliced by a slash. The bodyguard bugs chasing was over a hundred meters behind. He killed his way through with the ten-meter light blade. The unlocked mode also allowed him to take care of hoppers that sneaked up from behind. Zheng's expression was slowly growing with insanity.

The brain bug seemed to be highly intelligent. As soon as it saw Zheng's strength and speed, it reacted by sending the bodyguard bugs ahead to block him. While it walked slowly toward the tunnel entrance. However, it was walking slow as if it wanted to see if the bodyguard bugs could take down Zheng.

Zheng killed forward another several hundred meters. The normal bugs suddenly moved over to the side and the bodyguard bugs appeared. He was 1.2 kilometers away from the brain bug. There were hundreds of bodyguards in front that didn't fear his light blade. He could only run with Destruction if he got caught.

Though Zheng had his plan. He knew he wouldn't be able to get near the brain bug if he just headed straight into the bugs. The only thing he could do now was perform unexpected attacks with instant Destruction. He needed to scare the brain bug into going through the tunnel to where Zero was waiting.

When Zheng was ten meters away from the bodyguard bugs, he jumped.

All the bodyguard bugs jumped along but they couldn't reach the same height as Zheng using the movement technique. He stepped on the air and used Geppo continuously to move toward the brain bug swiftly.

He thought about using the Sky Stick since this was a wide open area. However, the hoppers in the sky flew faster than the Sky Stick. And if he were to use its jet system, that would make him go too fast. He had no choice but to use Geppo which had more flexibility. Several steps later, he closed in another several hundred meters.

The brain bug finally showed further reaction. It retreated toward the tunnel while ordering the bodyguard bugs to attack Zheng. The hoppers also charged at him with no holding back.

Zheng was 400 meters away from the brain bug. He finally entered real Destruction!

He dropped down abruptly to the ground. The bodyguard bugs couldn't even react due to his speed. He stepped on top of a bodyguard bug and leaped again. The bug got pushed into the ground. Then Zheng used Rankyaku.

It wasn't a powerful attack but its speed was extremely fast. The vacuum blade crossed hundreds of meters within a second toward the brain bug. A dozen bodyguard bugs near it jumped up to block the blade with their bodies. Saying it was weak was just relative to the other attacks Zheng could perform in Destruction. The force still sent the bodyguard bugs flying. A few collided with the brain bug and made the brain bug ran for his life toward the tunnel. Zheng came back down to the ground.

He immediately exited Destruction. The series of actions took him a total of two seconds. All those instant Destructions added up to about one second. He only had one to two seconds left. The tiny blood vessels on his sky were busted and blood spurted out. He looked in terrible condition. However, he still entered Explosion as soon as he landed before the swarm of bugs tore him apart.

Even though Zheng was feeling sore and exhausted through out, he still slashed at the bodyguard bugs nearby with Tiger's Soul.

He shouted through his mind. “Zero! See the brain bug? Fire! That’s the bonus mission of this movie!”

The moment his said these words, Zero pulled the trigger. With a loud bang, a bullet pierced right into the brain bug’s head that was only half way out the tunnel. A brilliant light radiated outward and illuminated the tunnel and a two-hundred-meter area.

# Chapter 28-1

Zheng was fighting for his life. Really fighting for his life. Looking out from his point were swarms and swarms of bodyguard bugs. Tiger's Soul was less useful than a stick, though the light blade could knock the bugs over. His strength and speed in Explosion also surpassed these bugs a lot. He swung the sword multiple times and knocked over a bunch of bugs.

Zheng ran as fast as he could toward the tunnel. He didn't dare to use the remaining Destruction time, not even instant Destruction. He had to make full use of every bit of power he had. Any waste and he wouldn't be able to escape this sea of bugs.

The sound of explosion came from the tunnel. Zheng looked over to see fire roared the within the tunnel. Shockwave spread out and blasted hundreds of bodyguard bugs flying.

“Obtained one rank B reward.”

“Uh... that's it?”

This notification was short. There was no mention of completed any bonus missions nor received any points. It was the normal announcement of killing a big monster and only for a rank B reward. He never encountered this form of notification but this wasn't the time to think. The tunnel was looking to collapse from the explosion. Zheng jumped

Looking down from above, he saw the bodyguard bugs stopped in place. All of them including the ones blasted away and the ones swarming at Zheng. These bugs didn't jump up to follow him this time. Zheng used instant Destruction and Geppo then he saw a bodyguard bug bit at the bug next to it. The one that got bit seemed shocked and bit back at the other bug. Neither of them could bite through that black exoskeleton though their actions dragged the bugs nearby into the biting. In just several seconds, all the bugs were biting and tackling each other.

Zheng glanced over the ground twice then focused on running ahead with Geppo. He soon came to the entrance of the tunnel. The hoppers chasing also started killing each other so they didn't get to the tunnel

before him. Fire was still burning inside but there was no time to be concerned because a lot of rocks had fallen from the explosion. Many more rocks were splintering from the burning. It would be true despair if the whole tunnel was to collapse. He wouldn't have a way to escape.

Zheng jumped down then used Soru to move through the tunnel. As soon as he exited the tunnel on the other end, he saw a hole that was ten meters deep and thirty meters wide. He was forced to use Geppo again to jump over. Near the hole was the bear robot holding on to Zero and the two stick humans. It was running with its jet system on.

The bugs everywhere had gone berserk. They would bite anything they caught onto. The warrior bugs swarmed over several dozen bodyguard bugs but they couldn't even leave a trace against that exoskeleton. While the bodyguard bugs could tear the warrior bugs apart with their pincers. Even though a bunch of warrior bugs were chasing after the robot, it was still able to run toward where the rest of the team was hiding.

Zheng flashed over to the bear robot's back and slashed all those warrior bugs. Then he ran over to the cave where the team was hiding with Soru and yelled. "Faster! Gando!"

Gando was running with his life at this point. The speed from the jet system wasn't anything a normal person could handle. He was barely able to use this speed after unlocking in this movie. Its speed was only a little slower than Zheng using Soru. A few seconds later, the robot charged into the cave. Zheng was waiting for this moment. He swung the sword at the ceiling as he backed until a ten-meter big rock fell down. He panted heavily. That was when he realized he didn't even have the energy to stand. His hand still gripped onto the sword because he couldn't relax his hand.

Zheng sat on the ground for several minutes until three people approached him from behind. He turned his head around to see Xuan, Lan, and Snow looking at him.

Zheng gave a bitter smile. "Almost couldn't make it. Can't even move an inch now. How's everyone? Xuan. How much longer do we have until

returning?”

Xuan looked at his watch calmly and said. “Two hours twenty-seven minutes. Go take a look at Kampa. He’s probably not going to make it.”

Zheng felt a shock through his heart. He didn’t know where this strength came from, but he jumped up and charged into the cave. In the middle of the cave was the bear robot rolling on the ground. That seemed to be Gando suffering the after effect of unlocking. On a corner was Kampa lying there. Blood soaked his chest. He did seem to be unable to make it through.

Xuan and the other two also ran over. He still looked calm. “We stopped his bleeding with hemostasis spray but an artery near his heart got cut by metal. He also loss too much blood. Kampa might not be able to make it through the remaining two hours and twenty minutes.”

Zheng felt anxious. This Russian man was a reliable person. He wasn’t quite like Zero but Zheng knew from learning of his past that Kampa would put his own life forward for comrades that he acknowledged. He was one that could take a bullet for his comrade.

Zheng said with a heavy voice. “What happened? Metal? The bugs can’t use metal. Is it from another team? That doesn’t seem likely. How can there be people from another team here? Tell me. Who injured him?”

Xuan waved his hand. “He was not injured by anyone. You should remember that I alerted him of the EMP rifle barrel overheating. The EMP rifle was designed with several second bursts in mind. However, the unlimited ammunition version broke this design and allowed the barrel to overheat too fast. Several hours of nonstop shooting would overheat any gun, not to mention the EMP rifle.”

Lan also nodded. “Kampa didn’t realize it until the barrel exploded. The metal pieces shot near his heart, then...”

Zheng sighed. He was overjoyed that they won two team battles in such a difficult movie without casualty. Everyone was going to get over 10k points and at least a rank B reward which would raise their strength by a lot. Yet, someone was going to die at this final moment.

Zheng exhaled. He walked over to Kampa and observed carefully. There were numerous wounds on Kampa's chest. Aside from that, his body was turning stiff, his skin turning pale and white. That was a sign of excess blood loss.

Zheng held Kampa's wrist then suddenly, he tried to drain the last bit of Qi he had into Kampa's wrist. The flesh that came in touch with Qi turned hot. Blood moved slowly along with the Qi. It seemed like Qi replicated the function of blood.

Zheng was overjoyed. He yelled to WangXia. "Disassemble the plasma grenades! Give me the parts that stored Qi!"

## Chapter 28-2

WangXia immediately began disassembling the grenades without a word. He easily took them apart with his expertise and carefully got the energy storage medium out. One carelessness with the plasma grenades and they would be wiped after running all this way. His back was soaked with sweat. He handed the little piece of silver metal to Zheng then began disassembling the second grenade. The plasma mines and timed bombs lay next to him. His mind was completely focused and his hands moved like the wind. It only took him a minute to disassemble a grenade and only slowing down when he had to separate the mithril.

Zheng was completely drained of his Qi. There wasn't even a single drop of Qi or blood energy left in his body and only a little bit in the rings. However, that tiny amount of Qi was not able to save Kampa and was gone after a few minutes. He had no choice but to send his Qi as they regenerated. However, that was not enough. Kampa's body temperature was dropping again.

"WangXia!" Zheng yelled. His eyes were bloody red. It wasn't due to anger but a rush of blood. Just then, WangXia separated the mithril. Zheng grabbed it without a second look and immediately began draining the Qi inside. The mithril from a plasma grenade contained about twenty percent of his total Qi. He felt a sudden drop in tension as the Qi entered his body but he didn't observe this sensation. He immediately started sending the Qi to Kampa again. A blood color came back to his skin and his breathing was returning to normal.

Twenty percent of the Chaotic Unity Qi was high in both quality and quantity. It could sustain Destruction for two seconds. Zheng sent them to Kampa without holding back and focused the Qi on his chest to increase his heart's pumping force. What little amount of blood that was left in the body circulated throughout the body at a higher speed.

Before long, Kampa opened his eyes. It looked like he tried to move his body but a pain from the chest struck him. He stopped trying and laughed. "Damn, got fired by a gun today. Is everyone alright?"

It wasn't convenient for Zheng to talk while channeling Qi. He had Lan connect them over Soul Link. Lan quickly did so as she was paying attention to Zheng's emotion.

"Relax your body. Don't worry. We are going back soon. We will still be able to fight side by side. Don't die on me, bro. We said we will head back to the real world with super human powers. We still have to challenge the strongest teams, team Devil and team Celestial. We have to kill every asshole in this realm. Don't fucking leave us!" Zheng felt said in his eyes and almost teared up.

Kampa smiled. "Who can live forever? Did we read that even the saints who created this realm died? Normal people like us should have died way back. We are dead people if it wasn't for you. I am satisfied for living so long, for going through the adventures with you guys, and for creating such a beautiful woman. I won't be able to walk the path with you anymore. I wanted to head back to the real world together. My grandma's pastrami..."

Xuan walked over and punched him in the back of the head. "Oxygen is limited in this cave. Talk less, use Soul Link. His wound also doesn't allow him to talk much." He said it with indifference.

Zheng continued sending Qi over without many words. He didn't want to acknowledge it but Kampa's pulses were getting weaker. His heart would only beat when the Qi passed over. This increased the rate of consumption of Qi.

Images of Kampa in the team flashed through Zheng's head, how he took care of the team members, how he relived awkward moments in the team, how his shooting helped them through dangers. The team's firepower wouldn't be complete without him. He was the happiest when he exchanged the werewolf bloodline. The smile at that time looked like that of a child.

"Don't fucking die!"

Zheng couldn't think much at this point. He reached behind as soon as his Qi depleted and grabbed another piece of mithril. Then he channeled

the energy throughout Kampa's body. Again. And again. He wasn't aware of how much time passed. Then when he reached behind again, there was nothing. He turned around to see everyone looking tipsy. Xuan and WangXia were the only ones with their eyes barely open. All the grenades, mines, and bombs next to WangXia had been disassembled. There was no more stored energy left.

"That's impossible! There were so many bombs!" Zheng held WangXia up then immediately put him back down. WangXia's fingernails had all been flipped over. The bombs were tightly assembled and they didn't have the tools. It should have taken him some time to disassemble the bombs but time was what he didn't have. He had to resort to using brute force. Yet, he didn't utter a sound the whole time.

Zheng was feeling anxious as he couldn't come up with anything. Xuan pointed at the bear robot and said. "Seven minutes and forty-two seconds left. I don't know how long that will last him but if you don't give him Qi within twenty seconds, he is certain to die."

Zheng turned back around to see Kampa's skin turning pale. He charged at the bear robot at once. "Fumoffu." The robot was pushed to the ground from behind then it lost the ability to move.

Zheng tore the energy storage device from the robot's back and drained the remaining energy. He ran back to Kampa while he yelled. "Xuan, let Gando kill one. You kill the other one. Let Snow go, please!"

He knew Xuan too well. That man wouldn't do anything useless and always went to extremes, especially when it came to the team's interest. That was why Zheng said this. He was afraid Xuan would kill Snow and that was something he couldn't accept.

He charged back to Kampa and continued sending Qi over. Kampa's pulse was barely there. A few seconds late and he might have died. He kept sending his Qi until he ran out of it. Then he continued to scrap every little bit from his body. He slowly lost his sense of time and the environment. When the sense finally came back to him, he realized he had fainted.

Zheng looked around then at his own body. He was floating inside a sphere of light. There were several other light spheres with people inside. He felt a shock as he realized he was in God's dimension. Anxiety struck him multiple times before he gathered the courage to look down. The first person that came to view was Lori. Then Kampa's woman was also there. Her face filled with tears as she stared at midair.

# Credits

Translator: [a0132](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)